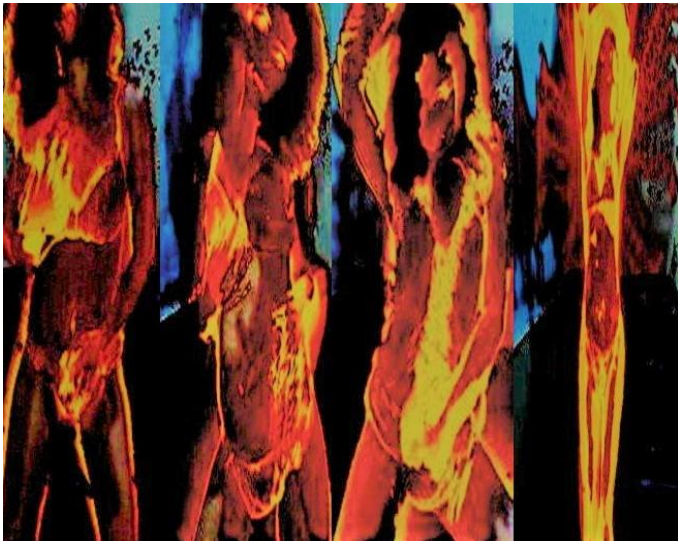


Fantasies  
&  
Transactions:  
Do You Love Me?



By  
Max Bellevue

Published in XXXXXX in 2019 by Eternal Liminality

Copyright: Max Bellevue/Eternal Liminality - 2019

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced in any form, or by any electronic or mechanical means, without written permission from the publisher or the author.

ISBN: XXX-XXXXXXXXXXXX-XXX-XX

# CONTENT

Prologue	4
Every Day Is Like Sunday	8
Breathtaking Fantasies, Scenes And Transactions	28
One More Time...	263

## Prologue

This is the story about a very good old friend of mine, his name is André.

He was supposed to write this book himself, as a sort of autobiography, but he later turned down that idea. He gave me some reasons why he didn't want to do it anymore. One of those reasons was because he really wanted to write a script. He told me that he really wanted to see this story become a movie/film, that's why he even suggested the music for this story. At the end of this book you will find what he thought as a possible and precise soundtrack for this story.

I told him that I was interested in writing this book. He accepted. Who knows, maybe somebody can make a movie out of this story. It might be very interesting indeed.

André and I know each other since many years ago. I met him at his music store back in the mid-90s. We also lived in the same neighborhood during those years. There was a circle of friends that used to hang out at André's music store, but the main core of that circle of friends was André, another good old friend of ours, Marco, and me. The three of us had the same age, we were in our mid-20s. We also had the same preferences and likes in music, in certain chemical substances, and also in women.

André used to blow our minds with several types of music that he sold in his store, and also by sharing important information not only about music, but about certain philosophies and points of view concerning other psychological-oriented subjects.

The three of us also used to hang out together, going to parties, pubs, clubs and meeting girls after the working hours at the music store. The three of us also used to travel together to several places, mainly to the countryside, we were all fascinated by certain places in the highlands, we used to go camping for several days or sometimes even weeks. There we had several experiences with certain psychedelic substances. We had certain goals together, and we also had our own individual goals.

After a few years, André decided to close-down his music store. The three of us still used to hang out at his apartment or at mine, smoking and listening to certain type of music, talking about certain books and information that the three of us shared. We started to explore certain type of knowledge, exploring our own minds and exploring life from a different level of perception.

Months later, each of us took separate ways. Marco was the more radical I must say. Marco decided to travel for some years around Asia, Australia, Africa and lived in the Patagonia for several years later, he then came back to Perú and lived near the jungle region, where he was involved in certain "spiritual" retreats, with a group of French and German scientists and researchers. Marco became a sort of "guru" for them, and we didn't see him for years. I went to study Film to Italy and the US, and later in Brazil, which is the current country I live in, working in movie/video productions. André kind of followed the same steps as Marco, he kind of dropped-out for several years, sometimes here and there. While he was in the city he was a very reclusive person, he spent lots of time alone, writing some books about certain type of music and other stuff, he also was involved in playing

music within certain independent music projects he created. Occasionally going out with some girls and friends. I used to visit André from time to time, like once every year or two. I also got involved in some of those music projects, going to a small rehearsal room and playing for hours with other people involved, it was just for the sake of it, like having "high" fun. In two or three times André and I traveled together during those ten years. We also visited Marco in the jungle once, it was awesome.

André refused to fully "come back" to live within his society and to have a common lifestyle during those years too. He simply took advantage of his own circumstance, 80% of the year he was wandering through valleys, mountains, small towns, camping in isolated places. Sometimes he used to send me pictures of his journeys via e-mail, from those cheap public Internet cabins in some remote town of the Andes.

In 2011, I invited him to visit me in Sao Paulo, Brazil. He accepted, which kind of surprised me to be honest. He stayed at my place for three months, we had lots of fun, like in the old "golden days". He then went back to Perú to keep exploring and enjoying his own path.

Suddenly, in late 2013, André wrote me an e-mail telling me that he decided to start an immigration process in order to go back to the US as a resident. Part of his family lived in the US for many years, and all this immigration process was going to take some years. At that time, he told me he was living in a country house near a town called Caraz, the pictures he sent me were amazing. He was like taking care of the place that belonged to a rich guy from Lima, and that he was also in charge of selling that house, he spent there several months.

I went to visit him once, I was curious about what was going on with him and at that place. I stayed in that big and beautiful house for two weeks, it really was amazing. You were able to lose the sense of time, like if every day was the same, surrounded by nature. André lived there alone, only with two dogs. Once I was there he told me about certain changes that he was about to take in his life, at this point we were already in our early 40s, we weren't that young anymore. I was deeply surprised with what he told me, and with what he started to get involved with thanks to the Internet. When he first told me I simply couldn't believe it.

And all those changes, especially since that time I visited him during his stay in that country house, are perhaps the essence of what the story on this book is all about.

I'll tell the story about André and the changes he went through over the years and how he finally got involved with some of the most beautiful women in the world, and how he ended up living in a faraway Eastern European country.

This is the first book I write, and perhaps it will be the only one. I'm not really a writer, and I don't pretend to be one, not at all. But, since I was a teenager I had a recurring dream, that I was writing a book, a story about somebody. So, I simply decided to make that dream come true.

Max Bellevue.

## Every Day Is Like Sunday

André was quite the common and average guy. His life could be divided in three main periods, the first one till he was 25 years old, the second till he was 41 years old, and the third period is the one he is currently living.

He was born in a middle class family, his parents came from Italian, French and Spanish families. Since he was 5 years old his parents decided to live in the US. They lived there for several years, first in Florida and then in California. Then his parents decided to come back to Perú. His father had different types of jobs in different cities within the country. André had the chance to live in three different cities in the north until he was 16 years old, then his family finally relocated in a nice neighborhood in the district of San Isidro, where he lived for the next 20 years. He studied in different schools, some were strictly catholic, some not. Since he was 13 years old he started to focus on music, he used to say that music was his life, he couldn't be one single minute without listening to music, and since then he became a serious music collector. During his last year of high-school he already had a part-time job in a music store in Miraflores, in Lima. His parents asked him what was he going to do and in what university he wanted to study. He wanted to study sound engineering and music production, but back then that career wasn't available in his country, there were only two main options, in the US or in Europe. But his parents weren't able to afford something like that. So he decided to remain working in that music store, but it became his full-time job.



He started to save money, he bought himself a car, he also invested some money in certain financial institution, fixed-term deposits. He really made some money there. He later bought two old cars and took them to some northern cities and sold them over there for a higher price. He also invested some money in a family business his father had, a seafood restaurant, where he used to work during the first two years.

During this period, André always had money in his pocket, he used to wear nice clothes, which he usually brought from some exclusive stores in the US, he used to go to the gym, he also had a nice car, a golden-colored BMW 320. He used to go out with some friends, drinks here and there, sometimes trying some illegal substances, most of the times meeting nice girls at bars or discos, sometimes he went out with some girls, a few of them became his short-term girlfriends, some were only "friends with benefits", and he enjoyed having sex with them, like the average guy in a capital city like Lima. But, he always felt the need to achieve his dreams, and his plans weren't to have a family or getting married, he always refused the idea of having children too.

It was during this time, when André was still 20 years old, that he had two options to take in his life. He wanted to forget about living in his country, he wanted to visit other countries, the farther they were the better, according to his feelings at the time. He had the option to travel to the South Pacific, to Tahiti, and work in an exclusive hotel over there. The other option was to fulfill a dream he had since he was a teenager, to put his own business, his own music store. He took the risk, and opted for the music store. He bought a small property in a well-known galleria in Miraflores. He then traveled to the US and made

contract with some wholesale music distributors. His music store opened doors one week before Christmas in 1994. He focused on certain type of music that wasn't really common or hard to find in this part of the world. He was very deep into Independent music, especially within the 1980s, styles like New Wave, Post Punk, Industrial Music, etc. That was during the first 2 years. The music store wasn't so big, and it was all painted in black, it had UV light, many posters, and the CDs for sale were displayed on the two main walls.

This was the period when I met André at his store, I was also a music lover, and I was also a collector of the styles he had there. He also used to have books about music, we talked and shared a lot of information. It was during this period that we also met Marco, another music lover. André broke up with his then girlfriend, so he was free again, none of us had a serious relationship during this period, so we spend lots of time together in the music store, feeding our search for music knowledge, and we also started to smoke high-class Cannabis, what was known as "Skunk", it was more powerful than the ordinary "standard" stuff. It was far more psychoactive, and like André used to say, it felt like if you turned on the light inside your brain... Hahahaha... This period lasted for almost a year and a half.

Then André started to go out with a new girlfriend, she was very hot and beautiful, she also smoked weed and listened to music a lot, she was also involved in contemporary dance and acting. Her name was Lucy, tall, pale white skin, green cat-like eyes, a girl any guy would like to take to bed. Marco and I also started going out with our own girlfriends during this period.

After some months, the three of us were free one night, we were at the music store, talking, smoking and listening to some music that André was just beginning to explore. He was eager to dig and discover the essence of certain type of music styles during the past four decades. He had certain contacts in the US that were into these styles from the 1960s and 70s. André also decided to bring and offer this type of music on his store, some Acid Rock/ Psychedelia and the German Rock from the early/mid 1970s. The three of us were blown away and stunned with all these styles, specifically with this type of German music, bands like Amon Düül, Amon Düül II, Tangerine Dream, Popol Vuh, Ash Ra Tempel, Klaus Schulze, The Cosmic Jokers, among others. We all read an amazing book about this type of music, written by a well-known early 1980s musician. We spent hours together talking about certain topics that were also linked to this type of sound/music. It was really 'HIGH MUSIC'.

During one night, the three of us were listening to this type of music in the store, and then a very tall guy entered the store for the first time, he didn't look like a "normal" guy, he had this intense look in his eyes, and the first thing he said, after saying hello was, "...Ohhh, you're listening to Amon Düül II.", and the three of us smiled at him. This guy was a bit older than us, and he was also very deep into the German Rock scene and other topics that we were just getting familiarized with. This guy was called Danny, he was Peruvian, but from German families, and he lived in Europe, but occasionally visited his relatives and some friends in Lima. He looked like a "dark" guru or master, he had this look in his eyes, like if his brain and nervous system were really switched ON. That night we stayed until 5 am in the music store talking about certain

information concerning psychedelic drugs, German philosophy, German Cosmic Music, "spirituality", esoteric topics from the East (India, China), etc. That night was crucial for André, and it opened certain "mental" doors for him, for Marco and also for me.

Danny invited us to go with him to a place he was going to visit in the highlands of the Andes, a sort of stone forest. He was going alone, so he asked the three of us to go with him. He also told us that he had some high-class and very potent Cannabis that he brought from Amsterdam.

A week later he picked us up in a car he rented for the trip, he had all the necessary equipment, we just had to take our own sleeping bags, some drinks and food. André was in charge of the music, he made some compilations on tapes especially for this trip. It was really the first time that the three of us were going to the main highlands. The three of us were like "coastal" and urban guys before this trip. It took us 8 hours to arrive to the place, it was Danny's second time in that place, he told us it was a very special place for him. He was there to take pictures, and he needed to stay at least four or five days. It was July, so the nights and the weather were perfect, it wasn't rainy season in the heights. We shared lots of stories together and for sure Danny became a sort of guide for us three. We asked him how did he ended up going to the music store, and he told us that many years ago he used to go to the same galleria to purchase music too, he used to go to the same music store that André used to work before, which was located on the third floor. We also shared the idea that the use of certain psychedelic substances wasn't really just for fun, entertainment or parties, we preferred to use these substances in a more intellectual or "brainy"

way in order to expand our perception, points of view, and amplify our perspective towards everything that surrounded us. And this trip represented for the three of us something new, a new approach towards nature, in a cosmic sense, a new way of enjoying life and the environment of the heights. There was a before and after during this trip for the three of us. Danny also told us and shared part of his experiences in life. Like I said before, he was like 8 years older than us. He told us many things concerning Buddhism, Taoism, and other ideologies/philosophies. He spent several years in India, China and Tibet. He even spent several years in a monastery practicing some techniques like a Tibetan monk. He was also a vegetarian since many years ago, he told us about that subject and why certain people should clean their bodies in order to reach other levels of consciousness. He talked about Tim Leary, Ram Dass and other main characters involved on these type of lifestyles and paths. We were all amazed and spent hours talking and learning from Danny. We smoked a very potent weed during those four days, and it kind of ignited or triggered something within our brains.

A week later, back in the music store, Danny visited us before he was going back to the Netherlands, where he was currently working and living. He told us he was going to leave that country soon and go to Burma, he was going to join some friends he had over there. We were surprised. And we were so thankful for all the knowledge he shared with us, the three of us were newbies on these topics. We never knew anything about him later. More than 20 years have passed and we still don't know anything about him or how to contact him. But it was

thanks to this guy that we really started a new period in our lives.

Months later, we were all free again, our relationship with our girlfriends ended. And we got deeper into certain subjects, music and trips. We all became vegetarians (or lacto-ovo-vegetarians) for the rest of our lives. One last gift that Danny left us before leaving was the phone number of a friend he had, this friend of his was involved in selling some psychedelic substances, Danny told us that he already told him about us, and that we were going to call him soon. This guy, called Alex, lived in the outskirts of Lima, near a valley, where he had a big country house near some hills. We used to visit those hills very often once or twice a week, in order to smoke and feel that cool and natural breeze, away from the daily noises and contamination of the city. It was this guy that also gave us some other substances and instructions on how to cook a cactus that had mescaline, the cactus called "Saint Peter". Alex also used to sell other psychedelic substances, like LSD.

Like I mentioned before, of the three of us Marco was really ahead... He told us that he was going for an adventure in his life. From one moment to another he left the country, and we wouldn't see him for years.

André and I still spent time together travelling and exploring more of these topics with a few other people and some friends.

One weekend the both of us went to a beach house that my parents owned, we would spend some days alone there, the house and neighborhood were empty because it was winter, nobody used to visit the beach during winter. We listened to certain type of music, the German Cosmic Music, and we took a cactus with us and cooked

it for hours. We drank a glass and a half of the brew, it tasted like a vegetable soup. And that was another experience in our lives that would pave the way for our future steps...

It was after that experience that André changed all the plans he had before. He told me about selling the store and perhaps going to the US again, where his parents were already living again. But they still had an apartment in Lima and André lived alone there. But he decided to not go to the US, he told me that first he wanted to become a wanderer, a sort of hermit, and walk, walk, walk and explore the mountains, valleys and highlands, seeking for something that was only inside his own head. He closed the music store and also sold the property. He then ordered some texts through the Internet and spent his time while he was in the city inside his apartment reading and listening to music, and also taking other psychedelic substances in order to experience certain things. He also started to go to the countryside alone, because I was also making my own plans. I really wanted to study cinema, and my parents offered me the chance to go to Italy and to the US. So, while André was already writing the first draft of a book about music, we spent an entire weekend at his place before the day I left.

During the following years I would see him occasionally when I went to Perú for the holidays. He finished the first drafts of the two books that he wrote, at the same time he kept travelling and went camping for weeks to different isolated places in the highlands.

From time to time we used to play some music together when I was in Lima. Yeah, such a nice experience too, to free ourselves and express ourselves with music,

electronic sounds and certain concepts. Good old times, for sure.

All of these experiences took place within a lapse of 10 years.

He then decided to sell the apartment that he had in Lima, of course not all the money was going to his pocket, but he received a nice amount of money. He also inherited some lots or lands in a northern region near the jungle. He was talking with a friend in order to invest in building a sort of temple or country house, as a therapy center for the "Minds", like he used to say. No doubt that André increased his levels of awareness, perception and consciousness very fast, he was now on his way towards something that only he knew about... He was following the steps of Danny and Marco.

But things didn't happen concerning that possible business with the 60 hectares and the 300 m<sup>2</sup> urban lot he had in that region. The friend he had kind of changed his mind under the pressure of his wife, who thought André was crazy.

Years later he ended selling the two properties and told me he wanted to invest in building a sort of country house for himself in the highlands, and simply wait until the moment he would leave this life. According to him that was the way he wanted to, he wanted to "die laughing". He used to say he was already prepared for that next step, and that he had been practicing during the past years. It was a new lifestyle and a new life that he had been dealing with. An amazing one for sure.

He used to refer to the times we were in the music store and going out taking drugs and alcohol and having sex, as a past life. Not exactly as a physical past life, but a psychological one. He really didn't belief in all that stuff



that was considered as "spiritual". André and I were smart enough, and we were convinced that it all came out from our own minds. There wasn't any purpose in this life, there wasn't any god or creator, or soul, or an afterlife. We used to think that the only true and real thing was to reach true happiness and wisdom. That was the real enlightenment. And maybe share that information with the ones that wanted to explore the same path, just like Danny did with us. That was true love. One of the most beautiful things to experience in this life was to share and be generous during life.

I agreed with him in all these topics, but I also wanted to satisfy my own needs and ambitions. I ended up working in a production company in Sao Paulo, Brazil, since 2008. I was happy with that, even if I also wanted to spend time with my friend doing other things. But, like André used to tell me, "Keep doing what makes you feel good, you are already enlightened, you are already aware, and with your mind's eye wide opened... Have fun and share it with others... The compass we have inside of us is now working and it's ON".

André kept like playing and swinging with his lifestyle, enjoying and having lots of fun surrounded by... Nothing! Hahahahaha...

Yeah, it sounds funny... But it was true, and that was what he really enjoyed, the Nothingness and the things in life that approached it in psychological terms. He liked to remain in the threshold between life and death. Like if death was his faithful and permanent companion during all those years. The process of dying is fascinating indeed, and André was a real expert on it. The "voices" were always guiding him...

Like Marco, that was now involved and in charged with certain mind expansion and health therapies in a very exclusive and remote shamanic center, located in the jungle region of Perú. We visited him, it was amazing. But, André and I weren't really into that type of region, weather or climate. Honestly we were more attracted to valleys, mountains and higher altitude landscapes. And I was the more "urban" of the three. I preferred certain city-like comforts, like a nice flat, hot water, Internet, electricity, a clean and neat space where I can have fun and enjoy my spare time in my own way, and also by sharing it with others of course.

To have André at my place for some months was a great experience, and like he also told me, while we were contemplating the sunset in Sao Paulo from the 17<sup>th</sup> floor of my apartment, while we were smoking some fine weed, "This is also nice... If I had the chance to have something like you do, I'll go for it...". That night some friends came to visit me, my boss was a very attractive young woman, she brought a couple of friends with her. There was this girl, who was brilliant, rich and very beautiful, I mean, every man would die for her, her name was Carla. This girl was fascinated by André. It was obvious she had a crush on him. She asked André to stay in Sao Paulo and start a new life there, she even offered him to stay at her place. We were all speechless, to be honest. But, André was very strong, mentally speaking, he was loyal to his own plans, and he answered her that he had one last important experience and "sacred" place to travel, and that he already had these plans, and that he wasn't able to give her what she really deserved. André left two days later. He had his second and last experience with LSD in the heights, he remained in that place like for 2 weeks. I went

with him to that place once, when we took some Psilocybe mushrooms. It was a very remote place, you had to walk like two days to get there. It was a big cave on the top of a hill. This cave had three entrances. We were told that ancient shamans used that cave for certain rituals concerning enlightenment. Other local people told us that some shamans used it as a portal to enter other dimensions beyond space and time, while other people told us that aliens picked up people from that hill. Hahahaha... Whatever...

During that last experience with LSD he saw everything, and I mean EVERYTHING that a human being can see! He went far beyond within his own mind, into his genetic memory, beyond the realms of death, like he said. He had another deep "mystical" experience, a very deep one. One of the things he told me about that experience was, that he saw an old man that told him something he still needed to experience in this life, and that André would have to decide in taking it or not, and that he had to be prepared for that life-changing adventure. That was everything that the "man" told him during his mental trip. The thing is that André was running out of money, in fact he was already kind of broke. So he decided to have some occasional jobs in some remote town as a helper and translator for a small touristic travel agency, the owner was a guy from Lima.

He then called his father, who was now living in Lima, since his parents divorced some years ago. But André's mother remained in the US, she started a new life, and married again. André's younger brother was also living in the US since many years ago. They were both US citizens already. The thing is that his father told him that they were going to sell his grandparent's house, his father was

living temporary there. André went back to Lima for a few months, he would be in charge of selling that house, it took a few months till a man was interested in buying it. André's father and his two uncles gave him a nice commission. Enough money for his next moves.

He then decided to explore a region that always fascinated him, and for the first time he travelled to the location of the White mountain range in a region called Ancash. He didn't know anybody there, so it was another adventure. While he was wandering in some of the towns in the valley of the Santa river, he decided to stay some days in one of those small towns, Caraz. He went to have dinner one night to a well-known nice restaurant. The owner, called Thomas, already knew André from a couple of nights before. That night Thomas was sitting on a table with an old man that happened to be a very good friend of his. Thomas invited André to sit down on the same table because the restaurant was packed, and he introduced him to his friend, called Dino. They had dinner together and had a nice chat that night. Dino was surprised by the adventurous lifestyle and other things that André was involved during the past years. Dino invited him to visit his country house located in the outskirts of Caraz, near the river. André told me by phone one night that Dino looked almost exactly the same to the "old man" he saw on his last LSD 'trip'. The day after he went to visit Dino, and André was happy to see this beautiful country house with all the comforts of an upscale house of a city. Dino offered him to stay that night in a beautiful bedroom with a fantastic view towards the mountains and peaks. The morning after, during breakfast, André told Dino about his plans in going for a two-week trek across the White mountain

range. And Dino shared his plans with André, and also offered him a deal that he couldn't refuse. André was surprised and at the same time excited, so he ended accepting the deal.

What was the deal?

Well, this guy called Dino was an ex-banker, a rich guy, that was soon moving to Canada, because his wife was over there, and he wanted to sell that country house as soon as possible, in less than a year. But he didn't have time to do such thing, and he offered André to do it for him. He had to stay in that house, take care of the two dogs and the maintenance of it, like the gardens, pay the bills, and a few more things.

He told André to go and do his two-week trek, and when he came back he would stay in that house and be in charge of selling it. Dino would go back to Canada in two weeks, and would come back when there was a person that was going to buy the house.

So, after André's two-week experience crossing the White mountain range, he did just that. André was more than excited and happy to be living in that house with all the comforts, like in a mansion for his own, and with two lovely dogs. Dino used to call André every weekend for any updates. It wasn't going to be easy to sell a house like that, both of them knew that. Dino wanted like US\$ 600k, and offered André 8% of the price.

The last words Dino said to him were, "Take your time and have fun..."

9 months would pass before the house was sold. But it was during those 9 months that certain things happened, many changes, many wonderful things. According to André, a drastic life-changing experience...

And I became a witness of that.

André was very happy after his two-week walk surrounded by nature, beautiful views and “talking with the wind”, like he used to say.

He remained in that country house from July 2013 till April 2014.

During the first three months he dedicated his time to smoke, play with the dogs, and cook his favorite dishes. The only people he had contact with were the people at the local grocery store, which was only two blocks away from the house, and one block away from the main highway. He also dealt with a couple of guys that were like the local guardians, he only had to give them some money every end of the month. Then, besides the two dogs, the trees, flowers, some birds and insects, he didn't have contact with any other living creature. His company was the music, the wind, the stars, fireballs, and his own memories. Everything he needed to survive was available in that small grocery store, where he found tasty and fresh fruits and vegetables, and other basic stuff.

The entire property was like 4000 m<sup>2</sup>, most of it was green areas, there was a sort of a mini-forest with a small hill and big trees, and also a vegetable garden. The view from the entire place was simply spectacular.

But, since October he started to use an old PC that was inside of one of the many rooms in one of the bungalows or small houses. André wasn't too much of an Internet person. He started watching some old movies, some documentaries, watching music videos, writing some e-mails. One day he decided to create a Skype account, the first person he called was me, and then his mother. He later took the desk and the PC to his room, which was located on the second floor of the main house, and it also had the best view of the surrounding areas. This room

also had a terrace with no windows and two sofas, with a view towards two of the highest peak in the Andes.

One day he had a Skype call with an old friend of his, Steven, who lived in Florida, he used to work on one of those music distributors, and was now working as a technical assistant in a recording studio. They talked about many things, and about those music projects and ideas that André had several years ago.

Two days later, his mother called him through Skype, and she made an offer to André. She knew that André wasn't really interested in going back to the US, the last time he visited the US was in 2003, and he only stayed 15 days. Her mother told him, that if he wanted she could start an immigration process in order to get a US residency, so he didn't have to worry about any sort of issues concerning living over there, and he would also be able to work, etc. He told his mother that he was going to think about it.

I remember that he called me and we talked about this, he also called Steven, and both of us told André that it wasn't a bad idea in accepting the offer after all. On the contrary, maybe it was a great idea for certain pending projects he had in mind, concerning his books and music projects. He ended accepting it, he called his mother and agreed. His mother was very happy, so she started the process over there. This process was going to take around 5-8 years. He still had time to enjoy the Andes, which was the only true reason why he stayed in Perú.

He started to have talks with Steven about possible music projects once he got back to the US. He shared with him what he had in mind, based on some music projects and experiences with music. One of those music projects was baptized by him as The Mind Charmer. For that music project he was going to need a female vocalist, and she

also would be the main image. He told Steven and me about it, and he said that he needed and wanted a young woman, a girl that had the precise physical beauty/image. One day he started looking on the Internet for some pictures of certain type of women that would approach the ideal girl, so he would also use these as an example to show Steven and me what he had in mind.

It was during this period when he invited me to visit him. I had a few months free before I was going to start working again. Two days later André was picking me up from the local bus station. It was the first time I was in that part of Perú. We took a cab and went straight to the house.

Holy shit! I was impressed. Since the first moment I crossed the main entrance, the main door, I was like in another world, like if all my responsibilities, all the personal issues that I had in Brazil simply disappeared, they vanished...

After a shower and a morning snack, I clearly remember the effects of my first joint there. I felt like I was in some sort of dream-like stage in my life, the feeling was awesome, we went to talk and enjoy the fresh cool morning breeze under one of the trees inside the house, near the vegetable garden. I was overwhelmed, in a good sense. I stayed there more time than I was supposed to, but for sure I enjoyed it a lot. Like I said before, every day was like a Sunday, a peaceful and everlasting Sunday. I still have goosebumps while I write these lines and remember the feeling during my stay in that house.

André gave me one of the small houses for me alone, it had its own kitchen with everything I needed, juices, water, a stove, everything!



I remember those starry nights, and even if you were really tired you really didn't want to go to sleep.

I had to cross almost the entire property to go to André's bedroom, or like he called it, "the office".

I really never had to cook, he always cooked for the both of us. And even the kitchen had a wonderful view through the main window, next to where the table was, and where we sat down every time we were going to eat.

I even thought about buying that place, to be honest. But it was out of my reach back then.

One night, we were in his bedroom, I was sitting in a couch enjoying the music, while he was doing this search for the music project he told me about. Suddenly, I remember he said in loud voice, "What the fuck is this?", I really didn't mind, I was too blown away, too 'stoned' to even stand up and see what was he looking at. After 10 minutes of silence, he turned around and said to me, I discovered something that I thought didn't exist. And we started to laugh hard. He said, "I need another joint to assimilate what I just discovered...". Hahahahaha...

He told me that he was watching a sort of blog or a sort of page/website of one of the girls he saw and grabbed his attention, due to the beauty of her face. In that page there was a link that read, "Chat with me live - I'm online in CGN.com". André clicked on that link and it took him to that website, where many small images, like small windows appeared on the screen, like many virtual rooms, with many types of girls. He searched for nickname of the girl he wanted to see, but it read that she wasn't online anymore, the last time she was online was like two years ago. André went back to the main page or homepage of this website and was surprised. He was stunned when he realized that all those small windows

where in fact online/live chat rooms, where he was able to chat or talk with these girls. This website was called Cam-Girls Network.

Since that night, André was like mesmerized, hypnotized, like if a whole new world or dimension popped-up in front of him. He realized and noticed that he was only considered as a "Guest" on that website, and that he had the chance to create a free account by giving his e-mail. He tested that website day and night, in order to get familiarized with it, only by being a "Guest", but he noticed that in many chat rooms the "Guests" weren't allowed to chat, they were muted by the "model" of the room. There were around 1000 girls online, and of course, not all of them were what André liked or what he was looking for, maybe less than 10% of the girls on that website were what he was really looking for. And that less than 10% was more than enough for sure.

Three weeks later, he decided to create a free account, and he chose the nickname of MindCharmer. He was now a "Basic" which had more access to some of the features of that website. It was like a real community, it had many types of features, but still being a "Basic" member had too many limitations for what André was looking for and wanted. He was transfixed and really deep into what he discovered. After all, like he said to me, it was amazing that he had the chance to communicate live with all these people, and with these type of young women from almost all over the world, thanks to a PC and the Internet. A few weeks later, I had to leave and go back to Brazil.

It was already December, and André had to continue with his "job" of selling the house. He started to go once a month to Lima, a one-day trip. He arrived in the morning, visited his father, he put some ads of the house for sale

on some national newspapers, and that same night he was on his way back to Caraz. He arrived early morning and went straight to the house.

December wasn't really the best month for selling a property, everybody was focused on the holidays. January was almost the same. Besides, it was rain season till March. So, he had a lot of free time to spend on this website, having fun and virtually meeting/chatting with some of the most beautiful women in the world.

Before New Year he went to Lima, and got himself a debit card from the bank where he already had an account. With this card he was able to purchase things on the Internet, and he was able to become a "Premium" member in CGN.

And that's exactly what he did two days before New Year. He was now a Premium member in that website.

And this was about to change the entire perspective and plans that André had until that time. He never really thought about all this, like he said, "I didn't even imagine that something like this existed."

And a new story, a new period for André was about to begin. A very exciting and unique experience...

## Breathtaking Fantasies, Scenes

### And Transactions

It all started that night... When André became a "Premium" member on CGN. He already had chosen a few girls, that he used to chat with when he was still a "Basic". He purchased around 2,000 tokens, which was the equivalent for 200 dollars. His first tips were to the four or five "models" that he had as "friends" on that website. From those five girls, he tipped 100 dollars to one of them, and the rest of the money was divided with the other girls.

André had a goal since the beginning, he simply wanted to deal and virtually meet a girl that could be interested in his future music project. It wasn't going to be easy, of course. This website wasn't really the best place to make friends, or to trust in somebody. It was really a sort of virtual brothel, hard to believe and trust in a girl that works there, right? But that goal was also his strategy to approach these girls. He really wasn't there to enjoy virtual public masturbation or nudity.

This website already had like 10-15 years of existence, and the main purpose on this website was, like I said before, exchange of money for any sort of sexual pleasure, whether it was nudity or not. Sometimes members were just looking to spend some time having a chat, and/or being watched by these girls.

This was a US website, and the main girls were from the US too, they were "professional cam-girls", almost all of

them were the typical nude "models", from different levels, like in "real" life, you can find sluts or whores from all levels, from the cheapest and vulgar girls, to the upscale prostitutes or escorts, right? The same happened here. Girls that were full of tattoos, piercings, with a very "bad girl" attitude, and there were also some very sweet and innocent looking "decent" young ladies, well dressed. Most of the girls offered virtual sexual services in the main Public Chat of their virtual rooms, others instead only did that in Group or Private shows, where only a few members, or only one of them, had the chance to spend some time with the girl. Of course, all these features had a price, and it wasn't so cheap.

Over the years, since the existence of this website, several other girls from different parts of the world started to become cam-girls. Many beautiful young women from Eastern European countries had their account and virtual room, the same with South American and Asian girls. Since the 2010s, this business skyrocketed, there were more than 1,000-1,400 "models" online, every day and at every hour.

André started to realize all this business and deals with these type of women, little by little, step by step. After all, he was a newbie in this virtual social world. He also started to realize that in order to grab the attention of some girls he was going to need more money, so this became a sort of job for him, and the great majority of women didn't like to waste their time making "friends" or having a chat for free. Of course, like perhaps each member had its own particular goal on this website, girls too. There were some girls that only got half-naked (topless), or even some of them, a very few amount of girls, were known as non-nude "models", they were here

mainly to chat, get to know members, some of them even to make some sort of friendship with certain members, and of course to make some money as well. Some of these non-nude even didn't ask for tokens, like some of them said, "If you have some and want to share it with me, it's welcome... If you don't, it's OK."

Now, according to what André was searching for, and also according to his beauty patterns, as a perfectionist that he was, he started to realize and focus on the non-nude "models". He began doing this around his second/third month on the website.

André really got fascinated by all this, he got deeply involved with all this, he was online for almost 22 hours a day, day and night, dealing and virtually meeting several girls.

André, like most men, had his favorite actresses, models or singers, that he used as a reference for what he considered as a beautiful woman. Based on the external beauty of them, he always mentioned that he really was attracted by the type of women like, Brook Shields, Nicole Kidman, Kate Hudson, Anne Hathaway, Jennifer Connelly, Jodie Foster, Liv Tyler, Françoise Hardy, Bilinda Butcher, Rachel Goswell, Toni Halliday, Annika Henderson, among a few others. Of course, when all of these women were young. But, according to him, all of these women were like the ordinary women you meet at your local supermarket, compared to some of the girls you were able to see in CGN. Did I make myself clear? Hahahaha... He started to notice that the girls that most attracted him during this period were from one specific country, Romania. Some years earlier there was a sort of Romanian invasion on this website, due to several economic issues in that country. Many of these girls, if

not all of them, really worked from some so called "studios", where a bunch of 10-20 girls worked, and not only on CGN, but simultaneously in other websites like this one. André also started to realize how big was this business.

He also started to become "friends" with some members, most of them were the same age or even older than him, and they were from several countries, from Canada, from the US, from Germany, from France. Many of these guys had several years on the website, they shared information and gave André some tips. But he really played with all this, he really didn't share too much about his goals and real level of consciousness, he preferred to act like a sort of nerdy guy or like a fool. It was better, and it had some results. Only with a couple of members he really shared the truth and his goals, and he told him who he really was and what he did during his life. One of those guys was from Canada, a nice guy, although with a different goal on the website, and with different tastes for women too, his nickname was "Rockman". The other guy was from Germany, like 10 years older, a good guy, not too much for nudity but to have some sort of fun time. This guy had a lot of money, he used to spend serious money and was considered a sort of true gentlemen, his nickname was "RealGentleman". But this German guy left CGN after a few months, and André never knew about him afterwards. After some weeks, he knew and had the enough awareness and smartness to stop making friends with members, he already knew what he wanted to know, it was enough. He was capable enough of learning for himself. From now on he would only focus on the "models".

So, back to the Romanian girls. They were kind of exotic type of girls, physically speaking of course. Some were real true beauties, some of them with a friendly character, but not all of them were non-nude, and many of them had a "strange" behavior.

After three months of dealing with these girls and also witnessing several types of incidents while dealing with them, he started to forget about the goal he had at the beginning, and forget about the main reason why he was on the website. Until that point, he already had spent around 1,000 dollars. So, he had to think very well what was he going to gain from all this in the end.

After two/three months, he really didn't have a "true friend", just mere girls to chat about nonsense and vain topics. But one night, and after a good smoke, he decided that his new goal was to study and research all this virtual adult world, he came up with the idea of analyzing all this, and focus on certain social and psychological issues, mainly on the behavior and attitude of these women and the effects that this had on their "real" lives, "real life" meant when these girls weren't online.

André thought it was a good idea to do such thing. But at the same time, he started to think about how cool would it be to meet in person, face to face, at least a few of these beautiful women. Like he used to say, "In my real and daily circumstance, I would've never had the chance to even see these type of women. They are so beautiful, like out of this world, no comparison with any of the girls that I met in my entire life. These girls looked like real top models, but they weren't. They were perhaps ordinary and common girls in their societies, that ended up knowing about this type of job, and wanted to make some money..."



André then became a kind of “close friend” with a couple of Romanian girls, they even used to watch André through his webcam, and the two of them liked him, not only physically, but mentally. These girls thought that André was a real smart, handsome and well-educated gentleman. They used to enjoy having a chat with him every day and night. One of them even told him that it would be a pleasure in meeting him personally. And that was the incident that motivated André to also add this as a goal or priority. He thought it would be amazing to meet such a beauty, even if it was only to have a coffee and only as friends, not necessarily involving an emotional relationship as a boyfriend. The simple fact of meeting in person such type of woman would be an amazing goal for him, a true challenge. It wasn't so easy for these girls to share personal data and meet a member of CGN.

Both of these Romanian girls that he was dealing with were half-nude girls, they used to undress only in Private shows. One of them occasionally used to “flash” her body in Public Chat. André really thought that these girls weren't what he really wanted to meet and deal with, he preferred the ones that were 100% non-nude girls. For him that kind of showed that they had certain level of dignity as women.

André really started to dislike dealing with nude girls, even if they were gorgeous and stunning young women. He also started to notice that Romanian girls had a complicated behavior, most of them were truly possessive and jealous girls. And that's how one of the first true funny incidents happened one night.

Both of André's “friends” were online at the same time. He really didn't know what to do, both of them were used

to watch him too. But, it was the birthday of one of them, so he decided to spend the night with Liliana. Besides, she spoke English very well, and had certain crush on André, she was the girl that was available to meet him in her city, Iasi. She was a very white-pale and naturally blonde girl, with green eyes, something André only dreamt in meeting or having as girlfriend. And that night, while he was at Liliana's room, he started to get messages from Daniela, his other "friend", he answered her saying that he was with another friend because it was her birthday. She replied saying that she was waiting for him in her room, and why did he had his webcam on, and also asked the nickname of the girl... André asked her why did she wanted to know that, it was only going to be for a couple of hours. Besides, Daniela worked on a studio, so she had a schedule, a 6-8 hours shift. While Liliana worked at home, and told André she was only going to be online for a couple of hours, maybe three, and then she was going out with some friends in Iasi. Daniela started to change her mood while having a chat with him, and the same time he was having a chat and being watched by Liliana. So he decided not to reply for a while. And like he was a bit distracted with both chats at the same time, suddenly he saw Liliana getting half naked for the first time, and he was impressed and speechless in seeing Liliana's breasts for the time, his reaction was so obvious that Liliana started to joke, "What happened André, you never saw a naked woman before?". He started to laugh, but she continued, "Or you don't like what you see?". At this point Liliana was a little naughtier than usual, she had been drinking some beer, it was already noon in her country. André replied to her by saying that he was impressed by her beauty, and that he

thought she was a very beautiful and sensual young lady. She replied, "And what are you going to do about it, ah? I would like to see you naked too... Would you like to give me a gift for my birthday?". He started to feel nervous, this girl was asking him to get naked on a webcam, and he never imagined this as a possibility for him, and she insisted, "Please... Please... Come on. Don't think it too much, I might get cold...". He really wasn't prepared for this. Even though, he was already hard as fuck... Hahahahaha... She asked him, "Please, stand up... You can start by taking your sweater off...". This girl was truly an expert on all this, a very manipulative young woman. Suddenly, her cam turned off and she featured as offline. André felt relieved, "Saved by the bell...", he yelled. He turned off his webcam and immediately went to Daniela's room. He noticed that she had this weird look in her eyes, like if she was really upset, and in her room there was like 20-25 members, the same regular guys that were always in her room. Then he noticed that she really was in a bad mood. Why? Hahahahaha... She started to chat with André in the Public Chat, and she started to ask him what was he doing, and why didn't he come before to her room, he answered and repeated the same. The other members that were also participating in the Public Chat started to ask what was going on, and started to send funny Gif images or emotes. And suddenly, she asked André to leave her room, and in front of everybody else. She wanted him to go back to the room where he was, she started to shout... I mean, she didn't write or type, she really started to shout in English, "Go back to that whore's room, and jerkoff with her, you are an idiot... Leave my room! I don't want you here anymore! You, stupid pervert...". She was really angry, she even started to hit

the keyboard and her webcam, like a real crazy bitch. All the members were shocked, but also started to laugh, and sent André some PMs (Private Messages). This incident was awkward indeed, but at the same time very funny. André also had certain feelings for her, so he was kind of overwhelmed. But, he simply left her room. And only a few seconds after that incident, Liliana was online again, and sent him a PM, saying that her Internet connection was bad and that she was already going out, and she also added, "You owe me something, André. I want to see you naked and cum for me next time I'm online, OK?". Hahahaha... Fucking girls, ah?

André then decided to have a couple of days off from CGN. He went to the town, visited a couple of people he knew there. He also showed the house to some people that were interested in seeing the property. He also spent some time with the dogs, taking care of the garden, enjoying the cool breeze and thunderstorms, cooking, listening and downloading music to update his collection in MP3, smoking, and having wise and peaceful fun in general.

Three days later he logged in again. He had several PMs from Liliana, Daniela, and a couple of other "models" that he already forgot about. At this point he had around 150 girls in his "friend" list. He was really into dealing with all these women, and he only had four months on the website. He started to check out the homepage, like searching for someone that was new. He already started to change his private and personal settings, not everybody was able to send him PM or write him CGN-mails, or see his profile. He started to learn more about all these features. He also decided to do a little "cleaning"

on his friend list. He removed like 80 girls from his "friend" list.

One day he saw that there was this lonesome girl, nobody was in her room, he even felt kind of sad because the girl looked like bored. He always used to check out the profile of the girls before entering their rooms. There was almost no information about this one, not even the country. He entered the room and she immediately sent him a PM, he noticed that she spoke English quite well, the majority of girls from Eastern European countries used an online translator. She was very friendly with him, she asked him if he had a webcam, and that she wanted to see him. He turned on his webcam, and she started to smile, and wrote "Wow! You are very cute, I like you. You look much younger...". They started a nice and friendly relationship, her name was Nika (Veronika), and she was from Ukraine, she had 26 years old, and she was still studying to be a doctor. She was a non-nude girl, that's why she didn't have regular members on her room, she wasn't the ordinary cam-girl either. She became quite a good friend with André, she even asked him if they can contact each other outside CGN, he said it was a great idea. They shared their Skype, and two days later they spent like four hours talking and seeing each other. It was the first time that André seriously thought about this, he really thought that the first step in order to meet a cam-girl was to contact her outside CGN. So, he started to prepare a strategy in meeting girls, by being a gentleman, trying to make the girl feel comfortable enough so she can really trust in him, by always having his webcam on, by being honest, and after some chats he would ask the girl, in a very polite and clever way, if it was possible to contact her outside CGN. Nika was a nice girl, very friendly

indeed, but it wasn't the type of woman that he needed or that he really wanted to meet in person, she really didn't attract him in such way. So, he had to keep searching. He started to avoid Liliana's and other girls' PMs. He simply decided to not reply nor answer them back.

André also started to deal with a Romanian girl called Silvana, she was 25 years old, a very eloquent and funny non-nude girl. She would become André's friend for almost a year. She always liked to watch him, and she also spoke English pretty well.

One cool and rainy morning, André decided to enter a room of a girl he didn't know. Her name was Sasha, they started to chat, first in Public and then through PMs. She really didn't speak English, she used a translator, and that kind of demotivated him a bit. But he kept going on and she told him she was from Ukraine. André really wanted and preferred to avoid Russian and Ukrainian girls, he used to say that they were very "cold", rude and that never really spoke English, with the exception of Nika. He thought that Nika was enough from that part of the world, but... Sasha was really a beautiful angel-like girl, with natural red long hair, deep blue-gray eyes, a very white-pale-pink skin. She was 20 years old and she also had this innocent and naïve look in her eyes. She asked him if he had a webcam, so he turned it on. André was kind of nervous, until now he really considered Sasha a girl that was a tremendous step forward in beauty patterns, he even joked before turning on his cam by saying, "I hope you don't get scared, I'm kind of old and not handsome... Hahahaha...". She turned on his webcam and started to smile, she blushed, and he saw like sparks of light coming out of her eyes... "You are very handsome,

and I like your smile a lot... I like you very much...". He remained speechless for some seconds, only smiling at her. They spent that day together, talking about many things. It was obvious that she was interested in him, she asked him many personal questions, and he felt quite excited with her. For him, she was a goddess sent from the heavens...

André was now changing his mind and started to focus on Sasha a lot. He changed his mind after a few weeks of becoming a very good friend for Sasha. He also started to forget about the Romanian girls, he wasn't interested in them anymore.

Now, according to what he knew about the Ukrainian girls... There was an invasion of Ukrainian girls in CGN, all this happened only some months earlier, due to the emerging social and economic issues that country was going through at the time, there was even a sort of war in the southeast of that country. The economy of Ukraine hit the bottom line, there wasn't any job, and the majority of girls, due to all that global online media that washes the brain of the new generations, they wanted to follow the trends and fashion from Europe and the US. Besides, the Ukrainian and Russian females, since many years ago, have this sort of complex or syndrome which they think they are true divas or beauty queens. Yes, it's true that they are very beautiful, but they are also very self-centered and arrogant, especially with foreigners. Anyway... The thing is, that Sasha told a lot of things about her country to André, and he was amazed of what people were going through over there, he started to focus a lot in that country, and when Sasha wasn't online, he started to read and search for detailed information of Ukraine. He also felt a deep connection with that country,

he really liked the color of their flag, the cities, the landscapes, and of course he remembered when an old friend of his, who was living in Serbia, told him many times about the beauty of the Ukrainian girls. Sasha started to tell him about how much cost this and that, how much to rent an apartment, how much for the daily expenses, etc. He was stunned... It was like if everything was three times cheaper than in his own country, four or five times cheaper compared to the US or Brazil. He started to think in how would it be in visiting that country, and being surrounded by all those beautiful women. One day Sasha told him that if he came to her country he had to be very careful, André asked her why was she saying that, and she said to him, "Because many girls will start chasing a guy like you, and they will want to have a baby with you and marry you...". He started to laugh, and told her that she was joking and just trying to be friendly and polite with him. But she replied, "I'm not joking, if I had the chance to meet you in my city, even if I don't speak your language, I would definitely like to be your wife...". Hahahaha... Of course, André wasn't any fool or teenager to believe in all that, but he started to realize that perhaps it wasn't a bad idea in start thinking in a possible trip over there. After all, why not? He also remembered what Nika also said, that he was a good looking man, and that many girls in her country really didn't like men in their own country, and that many times they preferred a foreigner that treated them like real ladies, and that most of the Ukrainian women easily fell in love with true gentlemen. That kind of triggered something in André's feelings and thoughts. "Why not going over there, as an adventure, right?", he told me back then.



It was already April, and André got a couple of phone calls from people that were interested in seeing the house again. He dealt with the two men and fixed the visit for the same weekend, one of them would visit the property on Saturday, the other guy on Sunday. The first guy offered \$ 550k, and the second guy never called back. Dino told André to deal with that man as soon as possible.

During the week that man returned to the town and they went to a notary office and gave 20% of the money in advance, so that Dino wasn't able to travel from Canada in vain.

Dino arrived a few days later, and finally decided to sell the property.

André got his commission, he was very excited about all this, but he had one week to leave the house.

Besides, the house was going to be sold with everything in it, the furniture, the PC, and even with the dogs.

He had one week to find and decided where was he going to live. He had to find a proper place where nobody bothered him, and a place where he didn't bother anybody either. He had this current lifestyle of staying awake until 5 or 6 am in the morning, he liked to smoke, and he needed the best Internet connection possible. But he really didn't want to rent an expensive apartment, and the true only location that could offer him all of these comforts was going back to Lima or another main city.

After three days of making phone calls and writing e-mails in order to discard some places to rent, he got a phone call from an old friend of his, Franco. This guy told him that the mini-apartment on the third floor of his house was empty since a month ago, and that he could rent it to him for a cheap price, because they were

"smoking partners" and music lovers. This guy had the entire house for him alone, and he also used to grow high-class weed in his backyard. And André would be clever enough to not tell anybody about the money he had just received, and not tell anybody about his future plans. At least, not for now. He would be discreet with this topic.

He finally took a bus to Lima, and he decided to stay in a hotel for the first two days. Then he would move to his new place, to his new "office".

He also bought himself a brand new laptop, some clothes and shoes. He was back in "Lima, the horrible" again, something he was avoiding for years. But, it was only going to be for some months. It was a "means to an end", and he had to manage all this very good and wisely to make his next step and achieve his goals.

After being in a sort of paradise-like place, this was quite the contrary. It was like living in hell, according to him. But the good thing is that he called the company to install his own Internet connection. And he didn't bother anybody, he had absolute privacy. He only had to walk one block to purchase the necessary things to survive. He couldn't really complain too much. Everything was going quite according to his new plans.

I used to Skype with him every weekend, and he told me that he had new plans, new options to explore in his life, he used to say that the "Spirit of '98" was over, and a new "Spirit of 2014" was born.

He kept dealing with Sasha during all this time, and also with Nika and Silvana from time to time. The good thing was that none of the three of them were online at the same time. But his priority was Sasha, he was really focused on Sasha. He also started to have certain feelings

for her, something he never felt towards any girl before. He even joked by saying that he could be her father, because of the difference of age between them, but that she made him feel... So alive!!!

He also started to clean his friend list in CGN again, and he only left the three of them. He still received some messages from some ex-friends, he replied some messages, but the majority of them he didn't even read them. Liliana was really upset with him, but he really didn't care, and he tried to manage any situation with politeness, though.

At this point, André was convinced in writing a book about all this experience in CGN. Writing about all what he witnessed concerning the social and psychological effects about this new form of meeting people online.

As a wide-awake mind, and with the enough higher level of awareness and consciousness, he really started to analyze the whole thing. And perhaps this evaluation and conclusions that he had concerning this particular adult network would determine his next moves and future steps within his own life.

Sasha became an important person in André's life during this period. During the following four months he got more and more involved with Sasha. He also tipped her and supported her with money, he used to tip her almost every day, like 50 or 100 dollars.

He also started to talk with her about all this job and how it might affect her, he really wanted Sasha to quit CGN, but Sasha was already hooked with it, he noticed that. But she was young, and he also knew that young people are stubborn, and young people like to hit themselves with a brick wall in order to learn from their own mistakes. Sometimes she felt not so comfortable with what he told

her, but André was smart enough to do all this in order to test her, to test her feelings towards him, and to really see if she was really trustworthy. But generally they had a good time while they were together, she considered him the best friend she had in CGN, and even other members in her room showed respect towards him, towards MindCharmer.

When Sasha wasn't online, André dedicated part of his time to meet with some old friends he had since the times of the music store. They gathered at Franco's place, which was downstairs.

One day, he also went to visit his father at the small mini-apartment where he was living since the house of his parents was sold. His father became a sort of alcoholic since some years ago, especially since he got divorced. But that day was his birthday, so both of them went out for lunch to an old classic restaurant where they used to go with all the family many years ago. André noticed something strange in his father eyes, like a deep sadness. They drank a couple of beers, and his father told him he was going to visit an old friend of his in a southern city, he was going to stay there for some weeks, maybe a couple of months.

André told his father about his new goals and the changes he went through during the past months, his father was surprised and at the same time happy for him. They spent part of the afternoon walking through their old neighborhood, like walking back to his father's place. They finally said goodbye to each other with a hug and a kiss.

André was always thinking about Sasha, even when she wasn't online. We could say that he had a true crush on her, no doubt. And he started to imagine what would it

feel like if he met her face to face. Sasha really motivated him in start thinking in going to Ukraine.

One day, he asked her if it was possible for them to contact each other outside CGN, even if was a bit difficult for her because she really didn't speak English. He was surprised when unexpectedly she gave him her Skype. They also started to communicate there too, sometimes even through video-calls, which was amazing for him. She behaved totally different, compared to when she was online in CGN. This was the real Sasha, and that definitely left a deep impact on him. But, he also realized that she couldn't fully express herself, due to the language barrier between them. He was very patient and tolerant with all this, he used to say, "For that angel-like girl I would tolerate anything. She really drives me crazy, and for her I'm capable of doing anything. Anything!".

One day she asked him if he had Facebook, he said to her that he yet wasn't familiarized with these virtual social networks, that all this was kind of new for him, and that he was still a bit old-fashioned. She smiled and told him that she didn't use that either, and that she only had an account in VK. André asked her what was VK, and she told him that it was like Facebook but for Russian speakers, and that it was mostly for people from Eastern Europe. She suggested him to check it out and open an account there, that maybe he was going to like it because it also offered the possibility to adjust the website to English. One night he decided to have a look, and he opened an account there. It was his first steps in learning how to deal with all that, and he discovered that VK had a vast and complete music library too. His first post on his wall was a short-film I produced many years ago, when I was still living in Italy.

But, somethings were about to change drastically with the relationship he had with Sasha.

One day he wanted to share some pictures of his past with Sasha, he asked her if she had an e-mail, because at this point he really didn't get any invitation or friend request in VK from her, he didn't even know her complete name. So, she gave him her e-mail, and he noticed that her e-mail had her surname. One night, after being online with her in CGN, he decided to search for her in VK using that surname. He found her VK page, but he was shocked to discover that she had a boyfriend, which seemed quite older than her. He started to translate some of her posts and comments from some of her pictures, André was already familiarized to use an online translator. And, yes! She was involved with a guy since 2-3 years ago, something she denied and never told him about it. She told him she didn't had a boyfriend and that she lived alone in a rented apartment, but it wasn't true. She lived with her boyfriend. André was totally disappointed, but he wasn't going to say anything to her, at least not for now. He would still behave like if he never knew about all this.

Also, another incident happened during this period. It was well known that some members in CGN used to record videos of Public, Group or Private Shows of the "models", and used to upload them and share them in many other websites. Sometimes you had to pay to watch those videos, but there were some websites that it was for free. André searched if Sasha had any video on the Internet, he wrote down her nickname and found out she had many videos. He got shocked again... Why?

Since the beginning of their friendship, Sasha told him that she sometimes got topless in Group or Private

Shows, and she really didn't get fully naked. She was kind of new in CGN, she was a "model" there only a few months earlier before meeting André.

But... She lied... André found some videos where she was totally naked, and in one of them she was even masturbating, and this fact would change the entire story between Sasha and André. He thought it was disgusting to see her doing that for money, throwing away her dignity like that. And the video he saw had like more than 2000 viewers. Wow! So many people watched her fully naked and showing her intimate parts, masturbating.

But he would remain silent for now. He would try to make Sasha herself tell all this to him. He was clever enough to keep the smile on his face and act like if he knew nothing about this. But in reality, this affected André a lot, he felt disappointed and demotivated, he felt that he really couldn't trust in Sasha anymore. He felt that she was just another ordinary cam-girl, that only thought about in getting money from members.

The day after, they were together in her virtual room, he acted like if he never knew anything about the videos or her private life. But he noticed that she was laughing and flirting a lot, she was also chatting with another member through PMs. He asked her about what was going on, and she told him that she was chatting with an old friend she had in CGN, that he was a young man from Germany. And she suddenly went into a True-Private Show, a show that lasted more than an hour.

After that True-Private show, she only remained like 10 minutes on her Public Chat, it was her usual schedule to leave at 2 am (Ukrainian time). André noticed that she had a different look in her eyes. André even joked about it, by telling her, "Wow! That was a very long show...". She

replied, "Yes, I'm a bit tired.". André asked her, "And what did you do during that hour?". She answered, "Nothing, we just talked.". André replied, "Wow! That guy must truly like you a lot to spend so much money just to talk with you.". Sasha's face and the look in her eyes suddenly changed, she wrote him, "I'm tired, I will go now. Goodbye!". And without even waiting for him to reply she went offline. That was a strange reaction from her, first time she reacted like that with him.

That same night, André found a new video of Sasha on the Internet, on a porn website, it was uploaded that same night, and he saw that she was wearing the same clothes she was wearing that day. After 15 minutes on that video she was fully naked, and after 10 minutes she was masturbating for like 30 minutes, touching herself, playing with her pussy lips and even using the zoom of her camera. And she seemed very happy to do all that. The video also had audio, and he heard several times that she said, "I like to see you naked, Karl. I like when you masturbate watching me... I like your cock. I love you, Karl." And in broken English!

André thought it was time to pull her mask out. He would wait until tomorrow. But she didn't appear online until three days later. Once she was online, he asked her what happened, and she told him that nothing, that she had to do some things in her apartment and also visit her mother. But, André also checked her wall in VK, and she had posted some pictures of her and her boyfriend spending time at the river, drinking beer with another friend of hers.

André turned his camera on, and after a few minutes he noticed that she didn't turn it on, like if she didn't want to see him. He asked her, "Why don't you turn my cam on?".



She replied, "I'm not in the mood, sorry.". He asked her, "Why not? Are you upset with me?". She replied, "No. I simply don't want to watch anybody today.". But he suddenly noticed that the same member that took her to that long True-Private show days earlier was also in her room, and she suddenly waved her hand like saying hello to somebody. André immediately reacted and asked her to turn on his camera, that he had something very important to tell her and share with her. She turned on his camera, and he wrote her a message saying, "You are lying, you are a liar. All this time I trusted in you, and you all this time lied to me. You are watching this guy now. I know it by the look in your eyes. Let me tell you something, Sasha. This guy is uploading the videos where you are masturbating. Here is the link... Enjoy watching them. Enjoy your time with this guy that gives you money and tells you he is your friend. Besides, I found out in VK that you live with your boyfriend and that you were at the river a few days ago... Why did you have to lie??? Was it so difficult to say the truth? You simply became another victim of all this virtual prostitution business... You are just another liar, an ordinary liar. Our friendship ends here, so feel free to keep being a virtual prostitute. Good evening, Sasha. Farewell, and good luck with your world full of lies!!!".

Sasha simply started to cry while she was with her webcam on, and then she logged off without saying anything.

And this would be the end of the story about André and Sasha.

This was really very sad for him, it kind of affected him too. André took some days off away from CGN to freshen up his mind and forget about all this.

He still had a mission, a goal he wanted to accomplish in the near future.

Four days later, André continued with his daily routine, searching for a new "friend" in CGN. He also started to chat about music and other topics with some "friends" he was making in VK, especially with women from Ukraine. And since he started to write his own posts about some musical documents, several other people started to send him "friend requests".

It was already mid-August, and one day he again decided to call his father, but he didn't answer his phone calls since two weeks, and they were used to talk every two or three days since many years ago, so it was kind of strange. A couple of days later, André got a phone call from his uncle, his father's brother. He told him that his father had been in the hospital for like a month and a half, and that the doctors said that there was nothing to do about it, and that his father only had perhaps one week or less to be alive. André was shocked, this news took him by surprise. Totally unexpected for him. He didn't know anything about this, and he told his uncle that his father said he was in a southern city visiting an old friend, but it was all a lie. André went to the hospital that afternoon, there were a couple of relatives, his uncle told him that his father had a severe pancreatic cancer and that it was already in the final stage. His father was already agonizing, doped with lots of medicine, lying in the bed with his arms tied up. His uncle said to his father, "Look who's here...", and André's father only reacted by saying, "What? Am I going to die?". His father really didn't know what the doctors already knew, it was just a matter of days... It was sad, definitely. André felt like guilty and at the same time disappointed, because his father didn't

really tell him the truth. He stayed there in the hospital for a couple of hours, until the visiting hours was over. He had the chance to be alone with his father like for 15 minutes, while the rest of relatives went to the cafeteria. His father wasn't really able to think or talk. But he started to call André, asking him to get closer to the bed. He told André, with tears in his eyes, that he was so sorry for not telling him what was going on, and that he was leaving something for him in his bedroom, and that he had to ask for the keys to his other uncle, that was in charge of all this situation and taking care of the documentation, etc. His father told him that he had to hurry up in going to the bedroom and search for this "gift", before another person would find it. And right before his father was going to tell him the exact place where this "gift" was, the rest of the relatives arrived together with the nurse, asking everybody to leave the room.

That night, André went to the house of his uncle and asked for the keys. The morning after he went to his father's place, and started to search for this "gift" that his father told him about. After five minutes of thinking where could his father hide this "gift", he went straight to an old stereo equipment his father had, and right between the wooden case and the cassette player he found a medium-size envelope wrapped in a black plastic bag, it was like the size of a brick. He opened it and he was surprised to find like 50,000 dollars in one hundred dollar bills. "Shit!", he said. It was part of the money that his father got from selling his parent's house, and his father had invested the rest of that money in buying a property in the US. André's younger brother was in charge of all that over there, and that house was for rent, so his father had a sort of monthly income, like a pension.

André immediately grabbed the envelope and put it on the inside of his jacket. He left the place, took a cab, and went straight to his place. He left the money there.

That day visitors weren't allowed at the hospital. His father told him to not say anything about this "gift" to anybody. He called a very close cousin of his father, an aunt, which he also knew very well. Her aunt asked him if he was going to stay with his father's belongings, he said no. She asked him if he didn't mind that she was going to take care of all of his things and talk with the owner of the place, whom she knew since some time ago. André told her that she can be in charge of everything.

He then went to his aunt's house and gave her some money for taking care of all this. She was kind of happy and told him that she felt good that he found the "gift", because she was the only one that also knew about this. André went back home and spent some time in CGN and VK, like trying to balance his emotions.

The morning after, right after he took a shower, he got a call from his uncle telling him that his father passed away two hours ago. He had to attend the funeral services that day. The next day they went to the cemetery. André was obviously sad. After all, everything happened so fast. He felt he lost a very good friend more than a father. He only told about this to a few people. And... Life goes on...

He had to continue with his goals, there wasn't any time to lose.

He talked with his brother, who lived in the US, and that was in charge of the property their father had over there. They both agreed in selling it as soon as possible. It was the best thing to do. And it was also very convenient for André.

Anyway...

André also decided it was time to start writing about the experience that he was going through in CGN.

Like I said before, this part might be the essence of this entire story.

Here we go...

He explained that not because it's a "virtual world" meant that it's not real. Of course it's real. And it's also a reflection of what can happen in the daily life or daily circumstance that anybody can go through in a society like ours. All this virtual or online world was just a new way to communicate with people. That most of the times were far away from each other, in another part of the planet.

According to him, CGN had two sides of a coin, like everything in this world, in this dual world. This means that a member or a "model" can have both type of experiences within the website, a positive, a negative, or both of them.

There were really two main types of "models" and two/three main types of members in CGN.

But... Wait a second... These girls or ladies/women aren't really models, in the proper or correct sense of the word.

They are cam-girls (also known as cam-whores). What they do and what they deal with is the exchange of something linked with sex in order to get money. Period! This is legally and simply known as virtual prostitution.

Now, this doesn't mean it's something "bad".

André wasn't against prostitution.

Who can be against prostitution?

You have to be a fool if you want to stop that type of job in a society/system like ours. Right?

But, not because you aren't against it means that you agree with it.

That was the case of André, he really didn't agree with this, with any type of prostitution. Whether it was "real" or virtual. But he knew and understood why does prostitution exist.

Although, he thought that women are able to take steps forward too, leaving behind that type of "profession".

He used to say, "If women really want to evolve in a mental sense they have to stop being a sexual object. And above all, stop behaving like a sexual object."

Many women complain that men treat them like a sexual object. But women themselves do it. And even worse, they enjoy being a sexual object. And they encourage men to treat them like that.

Yes, it's really a long and complicated psychological/educational topic for sure. No doubt about it.

But, it's really up to women to change that. If a woman stops being shallow-minded, if she starts getting rid of those "plastic" ambitions and "plastic" behavior, men won't find a woman to treat like a sexual object. Simple as that.

Where is it written that women have to look like ornaments?

Nowhere! Only in their own minds. Many women simply follow what a confused society and media dictates how should they look like, what should they wear, how much make-up they should put on their faces, or polish their fingernail and toes, or use fake eyelashes, lip injections/fake lips, fake breasts/implants, tattoos or piercings, in order to believe or convinced themselves that they will look more beautiful, or that they will be accepted as a "cool" or fashion-type of girl, or become a more attractive woman.

According to André all this was really nonsense, it was a tremendous amount of bullshit!

He really disliked these type of "ornamental" women. Which he considered "brainless". Mainly because of the consequences that all this ends up bringing to our societies.

Anyway...

On these type of websites, you can find several type of women concerning beauty and/or behavior, like from A to Z. You'll be able to find the common, standard, average personalities and attitudes. And of course, in hand with true beauty, with physical/external beauty, their physiognomy, their bodies, their measures, curves, shapes, lines, etc. Like some will say and consider: PERFECTION!

And like in "real" life, sometimes this external beauty is complemented with the woman's mind, her attitude, her virtues, etc.

Some girls are smarter than others, yes! That's also true.

Some are well-educated and some not.

There is a huge variety, many different types of women...

All of them in one single website.

CGN is like a big hotel. Where you'll find the exclusive VIP or first class suites, the business class rooms, and the standard or economy class rooms. Ohhhh... I almost forgot, and also the untidy and filthy rooms, the scary rooms. Hahahaha...

There are two main categories of females on these websites, the nude cam-girls and the non-nude cam-girls. There are also two main types of "models".

The first type, the majority of them, the ones who take this job like real professional women. We can say that these type of girls are like "born for this", or "made for

this". They really enjoy what they are doing, it fulfills what they want and what they need. These serious or "professional" cam-girls are basically nude "models". And when you look into their eyes you'll notice and feel a deep emptiness or darkness within their "souls". When you look into their eyes and you can easily get sort of frightened, they seem to be like "vipers", like "devils". They are like zombified. Like if they were totally addicted to a harmful substance or a "hard" drug. Most of these type of cam-girls are/were a "problem child" in their "real" lives. Most of them, if not all, are also high-class escorts/prostitutes, or porn actresses, or promiscuous females in their "real" lives. They have this sort of "femme fatale" syndrome, which they enjoy and helps them to keep their ego up high.

The second type of women, the minority of them, the ones that perhaps also represent just the opposite of the first type, these are the ones that in some way were forced to join these type of websites because their countries are going through a serious and difficult economic situation. What they'll earn as a waitress, shop assistant, or any other common type of job, won't pay their bills or their studies, or whatever they need money for. The struggle is too much for them. Some of these girls don't really like to work on these type of websites, some even find it disgusting. But they don't have any other choice. And it only takes one of these very young ladies, that starts to earn more money than what a teacher or a doctor earns in their own country, that sooner or later other girls will start asking them, "Hey, where do you get money to purchase a nice laptop, or a nice cellphone?", "Where do you get money to buy a car or an apartment?". Sooner or later, other girls will follow



the same path, thinking that becoming a cam-girl is not a bad idea after all.

Some of these non-nude cam-girls just need to smile in front of a webcam to earn some money. Others just need to watch men masturbating for them. Others will have to dance, tease and flirt with some members, etc. Believe me, by doing that they will earn more money than what a person that study a career for years in a university will. At least in their country, specifically talking about Ukraine.

Of course, there are also respectful, well-educated and the "nice person" type of cam-girls. They are charming, sweet and adorable young ladies. But some of them were also a "problem child", the typical and extremely spoilt teenage-minded girls on their "real" lives, that whatever they wanted to do was based on a whim. The ones that think and behave like if they know everything about life, when they are only 19 or 20 years old.

There also the ones that are very disrespectful, stubborn, with a terrible attitude. The ones that almost everything what they'll tell are lies. They use to lie and cheat to every member, saying that they like him, or that they care about him. They'll always show a fake smile on their faces, and all they really want to do is rip these members off, economically speaking.

There are also the ones that really have serious mental issues, ill-minded, and/or very complicated patterns of behavior. Some of them will truly qualified as a bipolar or neurotic person. They behaved like potential psychopaths. Sounds funny, but it's true.

But this isn't any surprise, right?

Like I said before, the virtual world is only a reflection of the "real" world.

Now, concerning how this job affects some young girls. Well... You can imagine that, right?

Some very ignorant cam-girls, with a terrible lack of education or principles, like to think that this type of job gives them more confidence and helps them increase their self-esteem.

What a bullshit!

Such level of ignorance. Right?

Since when does a woman need to be exposed to all these perverts and work as a virtual prostitute in order to increase their confidence or self-esteem?

Because these perverts tell them compliments and give them money for their external beauty?

Is that really enough for a woman to increase her confidence and self-esteem?

What the fuck is going on here?

When the truth is, that it's only up to a woman herself to increase her confidence and self-esteem.

What these cam-girls are really doing is increasing their ego and selfishness. They simply become a more arrogant, unbearable, or annoying/obnoxious person.

And sooner or later, they will show this "confidence" in their daily or "real" lives/circumstances. There's no doubt about that. They aren't just going to increase this "confidence" while they are online, right? It won't make any sense.

So, this is when problems really begin for them. The consequences...

First they start to behave like if they were some sort of divas, or real fashion or photo models, feeling like if they are worshipped by all the world. When in fact they were just mere sexual objects that got paid and listened to one

or two compliments by certain jerks or perverts within a virtual brothel. Right?

Sounds so ridiculous, so stupid, when some cam-girls used to say that they now had a higher self-esteem.

Yeah, well... What can we really expect from them?

After all, these type of websites are like a circus of perversion or some kind of freak-show.

Another fact... Imagine all those girls that were never used to certain explicit language during their young and ordinary or common lifestyle, and suddenly they are exposed to a new type of language, "Hey bb, stand up and show me your body.", "Show me your tits...", "How much for showing me your pussy?", "Show me your ass! Finger your pussy...", "Hey bb, how much to watch me cum for you...", and so on.

Ohhhh... Sorry... But some of these cam-girls were so bloody ignorant that they use to think they are also learning English by working on these type of websites.

These ignorant cam-girls would invent any type of excuse in order to think that this job wasn't so bad and that wasn't going to affect them. Or even worse, that this type of job was something cool and trendy. "I'm a model", was something common to hear from these type of girls.

Yeah, sure... And maybe that's why they had to lie to their real friends and relatives when they asked them, "In what are you working now?", "How do you make a living?". For sure many of them, if not all of them, had to lie. This kind of job wasn't really something most of them were proud of. Right?

Aren't lies the roots of all evil?

"Mom... Dad... I'm a cam-girl on the Internet".

Poor parents. Right?

Of course, it also depends on the type of parents these girls have. It wouldn't surprise me if there are parents that will answer their daughter, "A cam-girl? Wow, my dear. I'm so proud of you!".

Anyway...

I bet that a woman with real confidence and with real dignity wouldn't like to see her daughter exposed or working on a website or business like this. And not necessarily because of any sort of moral issues or beliefs, but because of the consequences that they really won't be capable to assume or manage later.

Coincidence or not, many of these young girls were really depressed and felt lonely in their "real" lives after they started working as cam-girls. They really didn't know why. They were confused girls.

But now we all know why they were/are so confused. Right?

André also started to make a research on certain forums about this type of job, and the consequences for some of these young women. The opinion of experts and intelligent people was obvious. No need to repeat it anymore.

This job was also very addictive for almost every type of women there. Especially when they started to earn more and more money. It was even more addictive than any drug. Perhaps comparable to the addiction of gambling. Another interesting fact... There were also many cases that some young ladies began working on this website as a non-nude "model", but... Weeks later they were getting topless. A couple of more weeks they were showing their genitals or pussies in Public, Group or Private shows.

A few more weeks and they were already doing Public, Group or Private "cum-shows" (masturbation shows). Yes!

They started to masturbate for money while being online on the Internet.

I can imagine the faces of their parents or relatives, or classmates, or close friends, if they had the chance to witness all this. Or if they had the chance to watch one of the many videos on several other websites where these girls are doing such thing.

Nice future for our societies, right? Nice future generation of girls, right? Nice future mothers, right?

This isn't any type of evolution for women, right?

Anyway, free will...

Another fact... Some girls were so confused about what was to be shy and what was to have dignity. Most of them really didn't know the difference between the two. They used to say, "No, I don't get naked because I'm shy". Weeks later they said, "I'm not shy anymore, I can get naked now". Such level of confusion and ignorance. Such lack of education.

When what they were really doing was selling their "souls" out and dignity for some dollars, filthy lucre.

Don't tell me this isn't prostitution, please.

Don't tell me that this is a step forward or evolution for women, please.

The income for the majority of these girls was as following:

The girls that worked from the comforts of their home got 50% of each amount of money that members tipped them. The other 50% stays with CGN. It doesn't matter what amount of money they got from a member It was always 50-50.

For the girls that worked on those so called "studios" they only received around 10-20% from the 50% of the tip. Because the "studio" took the 50% and decided what

amount they would give to the "model", depending on how many hours, or what type of "model" was she, etc. In other words, if the girl worked on a "studio" and she got a tip of 100 or 500 tokens (equivalent of 10 or 50 dollars), let's say, for showing her breasts or genitals, she would only receive 10 or 20 tokens, 50 or 100 tokens (equivalent of 1-2 or 5-10 dollars).

This means, that in order to really make some money on these type of websites, how many times she had to watch a man masturbating, or how many shows she had to do in one day or a week? Hmmm?

Now, I want to share and talk about the case of Sasha. Her "beloved" boyfriend gave her a brand new laptop as a birthday present. She was so surprised and happy, she really thought her boyfriend loved her. But, wait a minute... Why did he give her a laptop? Weeks later, her boyfriend told her that if she really wanted to earn a lot of money she should become a cam-girl. He told her that it was all illusion or fantasy, that it was just a virtual experience, that it wasn't true or real, because it was only through a webcam. He told her that it was okay that she had to get naked, because she was going to earn every month more than what a doctor earned in months, at least in her country. What kind of boyfriend tells that to his girlfriend? Hmmm? And Sasha was so naïve to think that he told her all this because he loved her. But, that guy, her boyfriend, was really running one of those so called "studios" in a city of Ukraine. Aha! Now we know why he told her to become a cam-girl, right? Such an amazing way of showing "love" to a young girl, right? Because he was almost like 10 years older than her. What a wonderful man. Such a gentleman, right? The best

guidance a young woman can get, that her own boyfriend tells her to become a cam-girl.

Fuck! What is wrong with these people?

In some cases, guys encourage their girlfriends and "supported" them to become cam-girls by telling them "You'll be a cool girl, my dear...", "The most beautiful girls work on those websites...", "It's funny to watch men jerking off for you. You will have fun, and you will earn many dollars...".

In other cases, guys weren't so sweet, that's why sometimes cam-girls appeared on the website with bruises on their arms, legs, and even faces. Members used to ask these girls, "What happened, dear?", and they answered "My boyfriend hit me because I didn't earn the enough amount of tokens to pay the rent or bills.", "He scolded me and got angry because my cam score dropped some points..".

Well, this also tells us what is the average type of men in those post-USSR countries, right? Where the majority of them like to solve their problems with a bottle of vodka on one hand, and a gun on the other hand. Right?

These people are programmed like that since they were very young, with that violence that every foreigner feels in the air in such countries. Such tough guys, right? But, they aren't tough, not at all. They are just cowards. The way they behave is like angry monkeys, even less than animals. That's the plain truth. Of course, there are exceptions and there are men that are the opposite. But that's the minority.

Every woman in the world deserves respect. That is true, no doubt at all. We should even understand and respect those women that for some reason or another are

considered as "bad" people, or the ones that behave like "bitches".

André also witnessed several other type of things and incidents during his first months.

Most of them were quite unfortunate for these girls.

The great majority of cases when a cam-girl allowed a member to have access to their private lives, outside the website, most of the times became a real nightmare for the girls. A few cases were like the opposite or nice experiences.

Now, concerning members...

Most of members are men, but there are some women too, lesbians basically, or like they also call themselves "bi-curious" or bisexuals.

But, let's focus on the members that are men. Most of them are between 18 and 65 years old approximately.

There are basically two/three types of men on these websites:

The first ones, whom André used to call them "dogs" or sometimes "pigs", are the standard type of sexually-confused men, the perverts, the ones that are on those websites to watch nudity and/or "cum-shows", in order to satisfy their sexual pleasures by also masturbating in front of their laptop and webcams, and sometimes they paid enough so the girl would also watch them doing it, etc.

Then we have the second type, the "wolves". These guys are not only looking for sexual pleasures. They're also after something else. And under the disguise of being a gentlemen or wanting to be good friends with the "models", their main and real goal is to be accepted as a "real" friend in order to have contact outside the website where they work as cam-girls. The great majority of these men focus on the non-nude or the partially-nude girls.



It's easier for them to manipulate them. They don't search for the "professional" girls because these men won't really get what they want from them, it would be more difficult, it will take more time and more money. The "wolves" aren't just eager or "hungry" for sex, they want or need something else, like I wrote before. They are after something that in their daily or "real" lives they can't find or get, basically due to many probable mental issues they have. They are also looking for affection, and at the same time they enjoy manipulating the "model's" emotions or feelings. This makes them feel powerful.

Finally, the "snakes". These guys are really kind of dangerous for some type of young girls that work on these websites. They like to brainwash them, they like to tempt the non-nude girls with higher amounts of money in order to break their will of not getting naked. Again, it's also about feeling powerful by manipulating these girls. The goal of these "snakes" is also to meet these girls in person. To get into their "real" lives. Another goal that these "snakes" have is, and this is one of the main problems for some girls, that they like to record videos of the "models", whether they are nude or not, that doesn't matter. They enjoy spreading and sharing those videos across the entire Internet. And sometimes these "snakes" will start to blackmail the "models" once they have access to their social networks accounts or personal data. Most of these men will track the girl in order to achieve their goals. These "snakes" also tip the girls with a lot of money, so they can feel and gain certain respect in return from the girls. And like the "wolves", they really aren't after the "professional" girls, they are after the new ones, the non-nudes, the naïve ones, the "innocent" ones, the

ones that need to solve several type of issues in their lives, the ones that really need money, etc.

And of course, the girls have to very beautiful and very attractive young ladies. And for these type of members, non-nude girls are considered like "hares", their perfect prey.

Many members on these type of websites need lots of affection, attention, and especially lots of LOVE. They are willing to pay for that "virtual love", they are willing to share their money with these non-nude girls.

But, why do they need to pay for love?

Because they will get the attention they don't get in their own "real" or daily lives. And if a beautiful non-nude girl asks them to turn their webcam on to watch them, what these guys will feel is something that blows their mind.

But, true love isn't for sale. You can't buy love. Right?

Let's remember something, the real or accurate definition of LOVE is:

Love is the feeling of caring, sharing and giving, without wanting or expecting something in return. You give, you care, you share, and you don't expect anything in return. That can be considered the highest peak of the feeling called Love. Love is generosity, compassion, affection, worship and devotion, and you don't ask anything in return. Like when a mother breastfeeds her baby, she doesn't expect anything in return, and she feels more than happy in breastfeeding her child, right? That's love! OK, but now it's time to talk about the "positive" things of CGN.

According to André, the "good" or "funny" conclusions of this experience and of all this new type of interaction between people within an adult website were:

Men that wanted to meet a woman always kind of depended on chance or "destiny", in a traditional or common way. Right? That's how it happened in the majority of cases. Whether it was that somebody introduced us to that woman, or that she studied in the same classroom, or worked on the nearby supermarket, or lived on the same neighborhood, etc. Whatever it was, it was always chance or "destiny".

But... Nowadays, with these type of social online networks, and specifically with these type of adult websites like CGN, men have the opportunity to choose the woman that they really like for the first time in their lives. Literally, they will choose a woman that is being displayed on a menu. First, by their physical appearance. Second, by their mentality or personality.

Of course, all this will depend on the goals or objectives of each man on a website like CGN, and also on their level of awareness or perception on what he really is looking for. No doubt that some people might think, "Hey, you need a virtual brothel-like website to choose or find the woman of your dreams?".

Well, once again, it will depend on how you see/perceive all this. For some men this website might just be like a virtual brothel to watch nudity instead of watching porn movies. But for other men, like in the case of André, he didn't consider CGN for that. He had other goals, and for sure there are other men that had similar goals like him. The thing is, depending on your goals and what you are looking for on a website like CGN, you will have the opportunity to choose the woman that you think is what you really want and always dreamt of. Whether it's only to have her as a virtual friend, or to try in meeting her in

person and experience something "real". Whether it's only for sex or for a long term relationship.

The truth is that a man can choose from hundreds of virtual rooms or "windows" (webcams). Some men will focus on the face, eyes, smile and gestures of these women. Others will focus on their bodies, breasts, legs, ass. Others on everything, as a whole.

Once again, it will depend on the goal of each man. The thing is that you have a sort of menu in order to choose a woman. And that, in my opinion, and in André's opinion, is something that never happened before in the history of mankind.

Is that a "good" or "bad" thing?

Hahahahaha...

For André it was a good thing.

Remember that not all of the girls or women on a website like CGN are whores, sluts, etc. Yes, they are the majority, but there are "standard" or "normal" or "proper" girls too. I repeat, the thing is that a man can choose what type of woman does he really want in his life, without waiting for the traditional or common ways of meeting a woman.

In André's case, and perhaps for other men, he wanted to meet the woman that he always dreamt of. A woman that in his social circumstance during his entire life, whether he lived in Perú or in the US, or in Brazil, he wasn't able to find. But, maybe he was able to find it in CGN.

I can't imagine myself during the 1990s meeting one single woman like the ones I saw on a website like CGN.

No way!

This website offered men the chance to meet their dream-girl.

Now, if you were or weren't capable, smart or clever enough to meet them in person, that is another subject.

The thing is, and what André called as “positive”, the opportunity/chance that a man had in order to choose a woman. That was a real and major step forward for men and for the way they could end up meeting a woman in their lives.

Now, the other “positive” thing about CGN... Well...

That’s a deep and personal experience that André had by pulling the strings in a correct way. And that is what all this story is about.

Keep reading this story and you’ll find out why dealing in CGN with certain type of girls became something positive for him.

André was never really against this type of website. On the contrary, he was very grateful with CGN.

But, there were many things that he didn’t agree with. But he wasn’t an anti-CGN person. Not at all!!

**"Stay away from those who only want to suck your  
energy.**

**Stay away from those who want to manipulate you  
in order to satisfy their own selfish desires, that are  
fed by their corrupted and filthy instincts.**

**Stay away from them, elude them,  
avoid them always."**

**"Never show or share the Light that you have within  
with those who don't deserve it.  
Only share your Light with the few that also  
have that same Light within.  
Share your Light with those who deserve  
your true love."**

**"Magdalene... Haven't you had enough?  
Isn't it time to take a step forward?"**



After a few weeks, and after occasionally dealing in CGN with Silvana and Nika, after dealing with some people in VK, and after he started writing some of the first lines about all this experience, André decided to continue searching for some beautiful girls that could be interested in meeting him personally. And these girls had to be from Ukraine. That was his main goal now, travel to Ukraine. He also thought that if there was a real purpose in dealing with all these girls, it had to be in meeting them for real, outside their jobs, outside CGN, to meet them in their real circumstance and in their city. It wasn't going to be easy, and he had to be very smart, very honest, very friendly and patient enough, in convincing some of these girls that he wasn't an ordinary member on this website. He always told them the truth about himself, his plans and his goals. He also had to focus on girls that worked from their own place, at home, and avoid or discard the girls that worked from those "studios", because girls on those "studios" didn't really have freedom and were forbidden to share personal data/information of where they lived, or were forbidden to share or give their real identity. And if their supervisor or boss found out that they did that, they not only were going to get fired, they would also have to pay a fine. Sounds so ridiculous, right? Like if sharing certain information was a crime.

André didn't really have too much time for this mission. He already spent considerable amounts of money, and he really wanted to save and spend the money he had left in traveling to that part of the world and have fun over there, instead spending more money in CGN.

It was already mid-October, one night after he finished writing some things about all this, he noticed that there was a new and very interesting nice young lady online,

she seemed to be a decent one, a non-nude one. He visited her room, he was very polite and behave like a real gentleman. He started to chat with her in Public Chat, there were a couple of other members trying to grab her attention too, but for André (a.k.a. MindCharmer) that was never a problem, he always knew how to manage any type of situation, and always grabbed the attention of most of the "models" when he started to chat with them. This girl was also from Ukraine, she was a very beautiful brunette, with big dark eyes, pale white skin, and she spoke English pretty good. She liked to listen to old music, especially from the 1980s. Her name was Katerina. That first night (morning in Ukraine), he spent like 6 hours with her, and her room was kind of empty, she was a strictly non-nude, so most of the perverts knew they were going to waste their time with her. André always tested any of these girls before he gave any amount of tokens, and this girl showed that she was a nice person, besides she decided to open his webcam, and she felt something towards him, she felt comfortable with him. So, André decided to tip her before she was going to leave, he noticed that she didn't get any token during those 6 hours. He wanted to support her. He tipped her 2000 tokens, one single tip. The face she had after watching her screen when she saw the tip... Her reaction was more like a scared girl than a happy girl, she only was able to ask André why did he do that, and asked him what did he want for that amount of tokens. He answered, "Nothing, dear. It was just a way to say thanks for the time that you spent during this chat with me...". She was impressed, her smile said it all. He said goodbye and asked her if she felt comfortable if he visited her room when she was online again, and she replied, "I want you to always be in my

room, but I don't want you to give me your money, I want you to be in my room because I like you, and not just as a virtual friend...". He replied, "OK. Deal! Thank you for being honest with me.". From that moment, and for the following two months, Katerina would be his new goal.

During that same week, Silvana also decided to share with André some personal data, and they started to contact each other outside CGN, basically through Skype. She called him twice that week, and showed him where she lived, showed him her pets, and talked about many things, and she ended telling him that if he wanted to visit Bucharest, she would like to meet him in person. André was surprised. Although, to visit Romania was already discarded, but he didn't tell her that, on the contrary, he even thought of taking her proposition seriously and keep it warm, in case something stopped him in going to Ukraine. After all, "Why not?", he said to himself. Silvana was a very interesting girl, not really what André was looking for, but she was beautiful and cute too.

A week later, he was having a chat with Nika, and she told him she was leaving CGN and didn't want to work there anymore. That was the end of Nika in that website. Besides, she was now working as a full time doctor in a hospital in the city where she lived, Lviv (Ukraine). From now on they would contact each other through Skype or by e-mail.

It was already November, and one morning André received a message from Silvana on Skype, she wanted to talk with him urgently, and she was coming back home in a couple of hours. He agreed. Two hours later they spent like one hour talking. Silvana asked him a big favor, she needed 400 dollars, and told him that she was going to pay him back in two months. Of course André didn't allow

her to do that. He told her, "I can send you the money tomorrow under one condition. You don't pay me back.". She started to cry... And that made him feel a little bit overwhelmed, he asked her not to cry and not to feel bad, that he considered her a friend and that's what friends are for. He sent her 400 dollars via Western Union the day after.

Meanwhile, André spent around 6-8 hours a day with Katerina, almost every day with her, with the exception of Saturday and Sunday, that was her schedule, the only issue was that she worked in a "studio". They became very good friends, and one night André showed her his page in VK and showed her the name of his Skype account. The morning after André noticed that he received a friend request on Skype, it was from Katerina. He was happy, phase two was going to take place. He really wanted to meet this girl. He was never pushy, and he always waited for these girls to write him a message first.

Another week passed, and on a Saturday afternoon he got a message from Katerina on Skype. She asked him if he wanted to have a video-call, his answer was obvious. They spent almost two hours talking and seeing each other. She was so gorgeous and funny when she wasn't working in CGN. André started to have certain feelings for her, and she knew that, she wasn't dumb, she even joked with him about it. She told him that she was in the city called Kharkiv. She lived with her mother in an apartment and had a cat, Sonya. They talked about CGN and all what he thought about it, she agreed with him, but she still had to work there in order to save money. They started to have Skype calls every weekend, and she also added him as a friend in VK.

One night, André was at Silvana's room, they were chatting, she always had his cam on. She asked him what was he doing when he wasn't dealing with girls in CGN, he told her about some books he wrote and that he was going to update them and translate them to English, and also told her about a new book he was writing about his experience in CGN and that he also focused on certain issues concerning the effects of this job on some girls. Suddenly her face changed, the look in her eyes changed, like if she was upset. She started to ask him, what was that he concluded or thought about this, and he explained it to her. And she started to complaint and started to tell him that what he thought about all this wasn't fair, that some women needed this for several reasons, and that she didn't considered CGN a prostitution website. He explained it once again, that legally speaking it was, even if there wasn't any explicit sex or if the girl was a non-nude, it was still legally considered as virtual prostitution by people that made a study about this. She then turned his cam off, and she started to act like a crazy bitch, she started to write him in a very rude way, telling that he was stupid and blinded, that he only believed in things without knowing the truth. She really went mad, and behaved like a poor ignorant. André felt very disappointed by her reaction, and he even told her that she was reacting like the typical cam-girl, with lots of frustration and stubbornness, and that she was only using excuses and not a single valid argument, because she was defending all this only for her own convenience, that in reality she was totally wrong and misinformed, and also taking it too serious and personally, when all he did was answered her questions with enough knowledge about this topic. He also told her that from now on he wasn't

going to visit her anymore in her room, and if she wanted to remove him from her Skype contacts, she was doing him a big favor. He told her that she was being very disrespectful. She started to shout in her Public Chat, in front of everybody asking him to leave her room. And that was the last time he ever had a chat with her again, but before he left her room he wrote a message in her Public Chat, as a lesson for her, "You just took your mask off right now. After all the help and support I gave you. And because you can't accept the truth doesn't mean I'm the fool or loser here. On the contrary, you are behaving like a frustrated bitch. But thanks for doing it, now I know what to do with you...". And he left her room.

Once again, he witnessed and prove all this type of behavior from these twisted Romanian cam-girls. He said to himself once he clicked on the button to log out, "Enough! Finally, no more Romanian cam-girls...".

And that's how he ended with only one girl on his friend list in CGN, Katerina.

But he really thought he needed to find at least a couple of other girls in order to visit Ukraine, that going over there to meet only one of them wasn't really a good idea. Two days before Christmas I went to Lima to spend some time over there with my mother, and I also spent some time with André.

He told me that he wanted to travel before March, and that was going to be a fact... "Yes or yes!!!", he said.

During January 2015, he started to gather all the necessary information and making a budget for his trip, he also needed to go to the Ukrainian embassy and ask for a visa.

Katerina left CGN during January, and the communication with her wasn't like it was before, they had a few chats on

VK and some occasional calls on Skype, she began to study again and she was very busy. But, the good news was that she agreed to meet him in person. That made André very happy. Katerina was the first one on the list. During the first weeks of February, he received an e-mail from Nika, telling him she was going to get married and she was temporary going to move to Germany with her husband. André thought in meeting Nika too, but with this news she was discarded. He never knew anything about her since then.

One late night, André was celebrating, he was listening to music, smoking a nice joint, because he went to pick up his visa for Ukraine that afternoon. It was a visa only for a one-month stay. So he had to travel as soon as possible. And that night, early morning to be precise, it was already 4 am, he was searching for some girls in CGN. There was a new girl that was dancing alone in front of her webcam, she was wearing like a big white blouse that reached her knees. She also had a different look in her beautiful blue eyes. He started to chat with her. Her name was Polina, she was 23 years old, she was also from Ukraine, but she didn't speak English too much, and she was working in CGN from her own apartment. She started to tell him that she was a vegetarian, that she smoked some weed, and always read about certain esoteric philosophies. She asked him if he had a webcam, she wanted to see him. He turned on his cam, and she didn't stop smiling once she saw him. He told her about his plans in going to Ukraine in a matter of days, she got surprised. He showed her the visa, just in case she thought it wasn't true. She asked him what was he going to do in her country. He told her the truth, that he was going to visit a friend in Kharkiv. She opened her huge eyes and said, "I'm from Kharkiv, I live

here.". André was so surprised, he didn't know what to say, it was the first day the both of them knew each other. He told her that it would be more than a privilege to meet her, and she said, "For me too, so let me know when will you arrive". He asked her if there was any other way to contact her besides in CGN, he told her that he had an account in VK, and she immediately gave him her real name and told him to send her a friend request. After 5 minutes she sent him a message in VK. This was kind of fast, very fast, André thought it was quite weird. Was there a true connection between the two of them, or maybe she was just only interested in ripping him off? With these girls you never can tell. The thing is that she was going to log off from CGN, but before she left André tipped her 2000 tokens. She said thank you, and asked him why did he tipped her, what did he want her to do. He replied to her saying, "Nothing! It was just a way to say thank you for taking the time to chat with him.". She told him that she was going to pay her back when they saw each other face to face. André took that as a joke, of course. He told her that she shouldn't think on that, that he considered her a friend already, and it was just a gesture of respect for the time they spent together in CGN. She finally went offline.

André was satisfied with what happened that day. He now had two girls that wanted to meet him, as a friend of course. He really didn't think in anything else, nor sex nor a relationship. He just wanted to feel the experience of meeting a girl he really liked, and from a website that perhaps only 5% of the members, maybe less, had the chance to meet a young woman that they really liked.

Three days later, André was in a cab heading towards the airport. It was 6 am. It was going to be a very long journey



indeed. His first ticket was Lima-Sao Paulo, he had to wait one day and a half there, the other ticket was Sao Paulo-Istanbul, then had to make the last connection from Istanbul to Kyiv a couple of hours later.

I picked him up at the airport that afternoon. He stayed at my apartment, we smoked some joints recalling all the years since we met, listening to music, then we went out for dinner. I really couldn't believe what he was going to do. Man... He really took all this seriously, he really achieved what he wanted to do. I told him to stay in touch, that we would have a Skype call as soon as he was in the hotel in Kharkiv.

I dropped him at the airport at 4 am, his flight departed at 6 am. The flight was approximately 13-14 hours, plus he had to fix the time as soon as he arrived, it was +5 hours, so he was going to arrive at 3-4 am (Turkish time). Once he arrived in Istanbul he immediately went to the counter of Ukrainian Airlines, the flight was scheduled for 6 am. He finally arrived in Kyiv at 8 am (local time). He had already coordinated with the couple that were owners of a travel agency, they were going to pick him up at the airport in a van and take him to Kharkiv. That couple also lived in that same city. The ride was 5-6 hours from Kyiv to Kharkiv.

André was very excited, all this was such a true and "crazy" adventure. Like he said, "Another dream that comes true.". He spent the five hours talking with the couple inside the van, while he contemplated the winter-like landscapes along the highway. He still couldn't really believe he was in a country that only some months ago he only dreamt of visiting.

It was Saturday, and he already had a date with Polina on Sunday. She was going to visit him at the hotel, where he was going to stay for the next three weeks.

This experience was going to be like the movie "The Last Temptation Of Christ", that's how André used to joke and compare it with.

Why not, right?

It's manageable, it's valid, it's cool and nice. It's an adventure after all the years of having a parallel or alternative lifestyle, right?

I mean, yeah... André reached certain levels within his own mind. He spent several years like a hermit, or a modern type of western "monk", exploring near death experiences, exploring the chemical process of dying, searching for answers within his own neurological microcosmos, within his genetic memory, within his own past, in order to learn how to manipulate his own psyche and make some changes and necessary adjustments. What other people wish to achieve during their entire lifetime, he did it only in some years. But, like he always used to say, "You must never take it all too seriously. After all, we will end up in the same void of Nothingness. Like an old saying read... Many things take place during death, but they simply don't involve you. And that "you" means your own identity, based on the circumstances you had to deal with during your lifetime. Death has nothing to do with your own ego.". He learned and practiced all that, he became a master of himself. But that doesn't mean that having other type of experiences, or better said, having them once again or to re-experience certain adventures, or moments in life, with a new level of consciousness, is something negative or "bad". Right?

He was a reborn "soul" psychologically speaking. He simply wanted to feel, with a new level of perception, what was to date a woman again, what was to know a woman he always dreamt of, and perhaps to have and enjoy sex with a new level of sensibility.

He also wanted to experience what was to visit, live and deal with a daily life in some far away country, with a different language, different habits. Like he said, "Only a year ago I never could've imagined, or had in mind, visiting that part of the world, visiting that country."

He finally arrived to Kharkiv at 4-5 pm, it was already getting dark, it was still winter. The couple took him to a local supermarket to buy all the stuff he needed, then they went to the hotel. What he booked was like a nice sort of mini-apartment or apart-hotel room, it had a kitchenette with all the necessary things too. The room was on the first floor in front of a small green area, which at the same time was in the back part of a small supermarket, and half of a block near one of the main streets of the city. It was OK. He also purchased a chip for his phone, to stay in touch with the couple of the agency and to communicate with Polina and Katerina.

André was very tired after the long trip that really took 3-4 days. But, like he shouted once he was alone in the hotel room, "Touch Down!". He then took a shower, ate something, and we had a Skype call that night, afternoon for me. And I was surprised that he took some "buds" of a very high-class weed, he took it inside his underwear. This crazy guy...

He spent 2,000 dollars approximately in the tickets, they were roundtrip tickets, so he was supposed to return in 3-4 weeks. He spent 100 dollars in that ride from Kyiv to

Kharkiv. The hotel room for 3 weeks was 200 dollars!!!!  
Amazing, right?

He told Polina that he was already in the hotel, she told him that she would visit him the day after, at 12 pm. He still didn't believe that she would appear. He went to sleep around 1 am.

He woke up at 8 am, he had breakfast, he took a shower, he was online in VK and listening to music. 10 minutes before noon he decided to stare through the window of his room, towards the entrance of the green area, there was a small kind of passage for vehicles. It was 12 pm, and suddenly a cab appeared next to the green area, and a very beautiful and gorgeous girl came down from the car, she looked like a top model, radiant and beautiful. It was Polina!!!

André was overexcited, he couldn't believe it. She started to walk towards the front door of the hotel room. He waited for her to knock the door. He opened the door, and he looked at her amazing blue eyes, she smiled and said, "Hello!". He gave her a kiss on the cheeks and hugged her very politely, and asked her to come in.

He couldn't believe it, she was a stunning girl through a webcam, but in person she was even more beautiful. She was wearing heels, and apparently was taller than him. She took off her coat, he noticed that she was very thin, but perfectly thin. She had a cake and gave it to him as a present, as a gesture and welcome to her country. She was so cute, they lit a cigarette, they started to talk a bit. But her English was not so good, so they even had to use an online translator. She asked him to go with her to the supermarket and buy some coffee that she liked. They went out, they also bought a couple of snacks. While walking inside the supermarket, he still couldn't believe

it. For him it was like a dream that came true. André was more than happy. Even if she was going to say goodbye in that moment, it was like a mission accomplished for him. They went back to the hotel room, Polina put some water on the kettle, she made a couple of cups of her favorite coffee. They spent time talking, smiling, sharing ideas and plans. He told him part of his story in CGN, they smoked some cigarettes together. He gave her some presents, a couple of Alpaca sweaters, some ornaments, some typical snacks from Perú. He also showed her the "buds" that he brought. She said that maybe it wasn't a good idea to smoke it in the hotel room. He asked her if it was possible, and if she didn't feel uncomfortable, to go to her place. He told her that he liked very much the picture she had in her room, which he saw when she was online in CGN, and that he wanted to smoke that "bud" with her at her place. It was already 4 pm, and she was happy to take André to her apartment. She agreed with a big smile on her face. They went out, she called a cab, and it was a clear afternoon, it was already like sunset, and he enjoyed the ride. It took like 15-20 minutes to arrive at her place. She lived in those typical huge blocks of concrete, the post-USSR type of buildings. They went through the front door of the building, that really looked like a backdoor, a very heavy-metal door. It was kind of dark inside the building, a few dim lights on the corridor, they took the elevator, which was kind of old, and she pressed the button of the floor, the 7<sup>th</sup> floor. André started to laugh inside the elevator, they both started to smile at each other. Once inside her place they sat down at the small kitchen table. He started to roll the joint, she boiled water in the kettle, she apologized that she had nothing to drink, only water and tea. He really didn't care

about that, he asked her that after the joint they can order a pizza if she wanted. She agreed. They started to smoke together, once again André was overexcited by doing this with such a pretty and gorgeous young girl. She asked him to go with her to the main room. She put some music on from her laptop, he saw the picture on the wall, and he started to take some photos of it and also of her. She went to the bathroom and changed her clothes, and without heels she was way shorter than him. He said to himself, "Such a cute and skinny beautiful girl...". She asked him to sit down on the floor, she had these sorts of cushions or big pillows to sit down. She turned on some dim blue lights, and turned off the main light of the room. She started to tell him, "This is me... This is who I am... The real me...". He started to notice something weird in her eyes, and she asked him, "Do you like it, do you like me?". André started to feel kind of nervous, they both were stoned enough with that fine weed. He started to test her, because he really wasn't expecting to do anything with her, at least nothing related with sex. She started to ask him more questions, "Why did you tipped me 200 dollars in CGN? Please tell me the truth...". He answered her, "I simply tipped you because I know that it's a job for you, and we were having a chat for more than 2 hours, that's all. I really didn't tip you expecting anything in return.". She started to laugh, she lit up a cigarette. And she said, "I thought you wanted to see me naked...". André started to laugh and say, "No, no, no... I would never ask you that. I have a lot of respect for you. I told you I'm not in CGN to watch nudity, it's not my fun.". She asked him, "Do you like me, do you think I'm beautiful?". He told her, "Of course, you are very beautiful, you are a very gorgeous young lady, you have beautiful eyes, a beautiful smile,

and of course, a beautiful and perfect body. I have no doubt about it.". Suddenly she stood up, she went to change some music on her laptop, a sort of Trip Hop/Downtempo style. She asked him to stand up, "Stand up, please...". He stood up, and she told him to dance with her. She grabbed his both hands and put them on her waist, while she started to grab his arms and started to hug him. Suddenly she went to turn on the main light, and said to him, "I wanna show you my tattoo.". She was wearing a sort of tights and a big t-shirt, she lowered her tights and pulled her t-shirt upwards, her tattoo was Ganesha and it was on her upper thigh and part of the hip, next to the abdomen. He started to smile, and said to her, "Ohhh... Nice, very beautiful.". She then grabbed one of his hands and put it on her thigh, like to feel the tattoo, which was kind of weird for him. He felt her skin, obviously he started to feel horny about all this, and it was obvious that she wanted to get laid, there was no doubt about it, unless she had a hidden plan, or maybe she was testing him. André started to think in all this, and the possibility of having sex with her. She immediately started to grab him by the arms, and she asked him to take her by the waist, by putting his hands on her waist. She started to look at his eyes, and he did the same. And suddenly, without even expecting it, she tiptoed and put her face very close to his, without even a blink in her eyes, always staring deeply into his eyes, she started to get closer and closer, her lips were less than a centimeter close to his. He asked her, "Do you want me to kiss you? Can I kiss you?", and she whispered, "Yes...". And for the next 10 minutes, without breathing, they started to kiss, and not only a normal kiss, it was like a passionate long French kiss. He couldn't believe what was

happening... It was like living in a dream, like if all the world around him stopped for those 10 minutes. He tasted her soul with that kiss. And, even if he didn't want to, he was already hard as fuck. She suddenly started to touch his genitals, and she started to laugh. And she suddenly started to say, "Why? Why? Why?", she lowered her tights in front of him, she lowered her panties, and she was wearing a pad, she was having her period. Immediately she said to him, "I don't like to have sex when I have my period. Sorry. So sorry." He only started to laugh hard, and said, "It's OK, no problem, really. Besides, I wasn't expecting that something like this was going to happen tonight.". She started to smile and asked him to go with her to the kitchen. She told him, "I would love to have sex with you, but I really don't feel comfortable, I hope you understand me. I would take off your pants and start to suck your cock too, but then I would like to feel you inside me, and when I think that I'm on my second day of menstruation, I feel bad, it's so disgusting for me. Sorry.". André told her to not worry about this, that everything was OK, and that he understood her pretty well. She said, "Let's smoke the rest of the joint?". He replied, "Of course, whatever you want... I'm happy with what you want to do.". Before she was going to lit up the joint she approached him and kiss him on the lips one more time. André said to her, "Your lips taste like honey, you taste like an angel, Polina.". She started to smile while she lit up the joint. After they smoked some hits, and after he turned off the joint, she started to hug him. She whispered to him, "I like you, you are a very special man. I never felt like this before...". He started to say, "I like you too, Polina. I think you are a true goddess, beautiful inside and out.". But, André started to



put his feet on the ground, he started to remember that he also had to meet Katerina, and that he had certain pending things he wanted to do while he was in Kharkiv. It was only his second day in Ukraine. He asked her if she wanted to eat a pizza with him, she said, "Yes.". She called for a delivery and in 30 minutes they were enjoying a vegetarian type of pizza.

And he really started to think about everything, he really started to feel something very strong towards Polina. He thought she was the perfect dream-type girl. But, he had to wait, there was no rush. They started to watch some videos on her laptop, and suddenly he noticed that it was already midnight. He really wanted to go back to the hotel. He asked her if she can call a cab.

She told him that on Monday and Tuesday she had to visit her mother that lived in a small town nearby, and that she wanted to see him on Wednesday. He agreed. She went downstairs with him, they kissed once again, he got inside the cab and left.

He arrived to the hotel, but first he went to the supermarket, which was opened 24 hours. He still was shocked about what happened. This beautiful experience really affected him. He was already 43 years old and had this wonderful experience of meeting a beautiful 23 year-old Ukrainian woman. What else can a guy ask for?

We had a Skype call that night, I was surprised when he told me all this. I asked him to show me some pictures of her, and I simply couldn't believe it. I said to him, "Well done, my friend. Well done!".

Now... Step two: Katerina.

André woke up at noon, it was Monday, he was free like always. He had breakfast and he took a long shower.

Then he wrote a message to Katerina on VK and on Skype, he sent her his phone number too, asking her to call him when she was free.

It was already 3 pm, and André decided to go for a walk near the hotel. It was cold for him, he really wasn't used to this type of weather, but it wasn't snowing. In fact, the sky was clear. Nice weather, but cold. He went through some streets, to a big park, like 4 blocks away. The name of the main streets in that area was Sumska. He started to have fun by watching the people, the stores, the public places in general. His feet were on Kharkiv, Ukraine. He felt amazed by all this adventure.

On his way back to the hotel, only two blocks away, his phone rang. It was Katerina, with a friendly voice she asked him where was he and what was he doing. He told her that he was on his way back to the hotel, that he had been walking for a while, and that he really had no plans, that maybe cook something for dinner and stay in his room using the laptop. He asked her if she still wanted to meet him and when was she going to be free. She told him that she wanted to meet him, and that she was free on Wednesday since 2 pm. She told him that they could meet in a place near his hotel, and that she was going to call him on Tuesday night to coordinate the exact place. He said it was a perfect idea, and that he would wait for her call. So, he would be free on Tuesday all day.

He went back to the hotel room, he cooked something, and stayed online until 3 am.

On Tuesday, he decided to go out for a walk again, not too far away, just to experience and feel the daily life on that part of the city. But he started to feel a little bit worried about Wednesday, because Polina told him that she wanted to see him again that same day.

He went back to the hotel. Katerina called him around 9 pm. She told him that they can meet at a nearby shopping center, outside the McDonald's. She asked him if it was fine with him, and he told her it was perfect. He saw that shopping center earlier that day, so he already knew where it was. She told him that they can meet at 3 pm. He said, "Perfect! I would be there at 3 pm.". He spent the rest of the night being online until 2 am.

Wednesday, he woke up at 11 am. He did the usual stuff, he had breakfast and took a shower.

At 2 pm he went out and started to walk towards the shopping center. While he was walking his phone rang, it was Polina. She told him that she was going to stay one more day at her mother's place and that she was going back to Kharkiv on Thursday morning. She was going to call him once she was at her place. "Cool!", he said. He felt better now, relieved.

He arrived at McDonald's 15 minutes earlier. At 3 pm, just across the street where he was standing, he saw a girl that was waving her arm at him. For some seconds he thought, "To who is this amazing beauty queen waving at?". He looked to his left, then to his right, and suddenly this girl was crossing the street towards him, looking at him with a big smile on her face... He couldn't believe it, it was Katerina. She looked so different, she was the same height as André, and she looked a million times more beautiful and radiant than what she looked like through a webcam. He was stunned, he was speechless. "Hellooooo...", she said while she was approaching him. "Wow! Hellooooo... Katerinaaaa...", he said. She kissed him on the cheeks and hugged him with a very friendly vibe. She was very happy to see him, while he was kind of speechless.

She then asked him if he wanted to go inside the shopping center. He said, "Yes. Sure, let's go inside.". They went to a sort of small food court and sat down at a table. They started to talk, her English was much better than Polina's. And she was also a "serious" girl, a "proper" girl, kind of conservative, she was studying literature and philology, and also English and German. She almost didn't use make-up, she didn't have any tattoo or piercing, she wasn't that type of girl. According to André she was perfect, the perfect woman that any serious and smart guy would like to have as a wife and raise a family. He asked her what were her plans for the rest of the afternoon and evening, she told him that she was free and had no plans at all, that her plan was to spend the rest of day with him. He told her that he had some presents for her, and that he didn't bring them so he didn't have to be carrying things, and that next time they would see each other he will give them to her. She was surprised, "Gifts? Really?", she said. He answered her, "Yes, of course, A couple of sweaters made from alpaca, and some typical ornaments from Perú, and also some chocolates, some cookies and some typical snacks.". Her huge hazel-dark eyes were like on fire, like when they offer a big piece of cake to a little girl, it was funny to see her gestures and the way she expressed herself. She was a gorgeous young lady. He asked her if she wanted to go somewhere else, to a restaurant, a café, wherever she wanted, and that she was her guest for the rest of the day, he said, "Please, take advantage of me, I enjoy it.". She laughed and asked him if he wanted to go to eat something or drink something, and he told her, "Dear, please... It's your city, your country, your language. Take me wherever you want to go. If you want to drink

something, let's go and drink something, then we can eat something too. No problem at all. Do you like any special type of food in particular? Which is the best restaurant or your favorite restaurant? Let's go... Life's only once...". He knew about this exclusive five-star hotel that had a restaurant on the last floor, and that you were able to see the entire city, he asked her about it, she told him that she knew it, but she never went to that place, it was out of reach for her. He asked her, "Would you like to go there? Yes, or no?". She answered him like with a little bit of fear, "OK, let's go... But, are you sure?". André smiled at her and said, "Who do you think you're dealing with? Of course, let's go. A goddess like you deserves it...". She blushed, and she smiled, and she didn't know what to say. That place was only a few blocks away, so they went walking. While they were on their way, she told him, "You know something? You look much younger, it's hard to believe that you are 43 years old. If I didn't know your age, I would say you have 33 or less.". He said, "Thanks, I'll take that as a compliment.", and they both laughed. Once they were in the entrance of the hotel, he asked her if she wanted to drink something, he remembered that she liked to drink beer, so he said, "Won't you like to drink some good beer? I usually don't drink, but now I think I'll do an exception with you.". She replied, "OK, yes! Let's drink a beer.". The bar was next to the restaurant, and had a very nice view, so they went and sat at a nice table near a big window. The place was almost empty. They ordered a couple of beers, her favorite was Stella Artois, they ordered two small bottles. They both talked about their lives, plans, about what André was writing, and about the experience he was going through. He told her about Polina, but without details. She asked him, "Did you have

sex with her?". He replied, "Noooo. I'm not after that, dear.". She said, "Strange, most of foreigners come to Ukraine looking for sex... Hahahaha...". He smiled at her, and he repeated that it really wasn't his goal or plan, but if a girl wanted to have sex with him, after all he was a man too, and he liked women. And since that moment, she started to have a different look in her eyes, maybe it was the effect of the beer, maybe not. But they were already going to finish the first bottle, and according to André she seemed a little, just a little bit drunk. So, he decided to ask her, "Would you like to eat something, or you would like another beer?", without even thinking on it, she immediately answered, "If you drink another one too, I would really like to drink another one.". And just to be polite and respectful with her, he said, "Are you sure? I don't want you to think I want you to get drunk. I didn't expect to drink alcohol with you... Hahahaha...". She said, "Hahahaha... Let's drink another one... Or you are afraid that I'll get dangerous? Hahahaha..." He laughed and said, "Never, I would never think that about you. Not at all. I have an enormous respect for you, and I consider you a very good friend.". She took her last sip of beer from the glass, and she looked at him deeply into his eyes. André felt something funny, strange and nice at the same time. Like if her eyes were getting on fire... They ordered a second round of beer. André asked her if she felt uncomfortable if he went to smoke a cigarette to the main balcony, she said, "No, not at all. In fact, I want to smoke too. I'll go with you.". He replied, "I thought you didn't smoke.". She replied, "I smoke very rare, occasionally, when I drink beer I like to smoke sometimes.". He said, "OK, let's go then...". He invited her some of his cigarettes, which weren't so strong. She liked

it, and while they were smoking she started to ask him, "And what will you do tonight? I mean, once I go back home.". He answered, "Well, nothing really. Maybe stay online for a while, listen to some music, maybe till 2 or 3 am.". He then said, "If you want we can go to the hotel after we have dinner, so I can give you the presents, and then you can call a cab. Don't worry, I will pay for everything.". He thought that maybe she was going to think that he wanted to take advantage of her, or have sex with her, so he immediately said, "Or maybe we can do that another day, whenever you wish or want, or when you have the mood... Hahahahaha... No problem for me.". She smiled and said, "I think we can go after dinner, I'm curious to see what presents you brought for me, and I'm curious to see the hotel where you are.". "OK, fine with me. After all, we are only 5 blocks away.". She raised her hand that was holding the glass of beer and said, while she looked at him straight into his eyes, "Cheers!!". He did the same. After the smoke they went back to the small table. They finished the second bottle of beer, and he called the waiter, who happened to speak English. He asked him for the check, and the waiter asked him if they were going to go to the restaurant. She started to talk to him in Ukrainian at the same time, it was funny. He told the waiter that yes, they were going to eat something. The waiter said they could add the beers to the same check at the restaurant. He said, "Fine, no problem.". He left a nice tip over the table, and also put a bill on the young waiter's pocket of his vest, as a nice tip. And they walked towards the restaurant. The waiter said "Thank you very much, sir.", André replied, "You are welcome. Thanks to you.". Katerina stared at André during all this, and she said to him, "You're a real gentleman, André. I'm

surprised.". He said to her, "Well, that's normal for me. I like to treat people the way I would like to be treated.". She looked at him again, with that same look in her eyes like when she said "cheers" when they were at the balcony. They sat down at a nice table near a window. This time a waitress took the order, she also spoke English. He really didn't use to eat too much, so he ordered something simple. She did the same. André asked her, "What would you like to drink this time?". She answered, "Would you drink a glass of white wine with me?". He answered, "OK!".

After they had dinner, and after he paid, they both walked out of the place. They started to walk towards the hotel where he was. They were smiling and talking about the lifestyle in her country. She told him that she was really from another city nearby, Poltava. That her mother also had a sort of country house in a village nearby and also an apartment in Kharkiv which wasn't so far away, only 10 minutes in a cab. He felt good that she lived close by. He asked her if she needed or wanted to buy something in the supermarket. She asked him, "Do you have some coffee in your room?". He said, "Yes." She said, "OK, let's go straight to your room. I'm so curious to see what you want to give me.". And she started to laugh. She had this sweet and delicate laugh, which was really driving André crazy, she was so full of grace. Once they entered the room, she took her boots off, she was a little bit shorter than André, but taller than Polina. André and Katerina were almost the same height. He turned on all the lights, his laptop was already on, playing some music. He put water in the boiler. Then he grabbed his suitcase and took out the presents for Katerina. She felt excited, very happy. She blushed again, and said, "Oh my god! André... Thank



you so much, everything is so beautiful. She took off her sweater and started to try the sweaters he gave her. She also started to check the snacks, and asked him to translate what it said. She was sitting on the edge of the bed, while André was serving the cups with hot water. She didn't stop staring at him, in a very peculiar way, with a big smile on her face. André couldn't resist that anymore, and he asked her in a very gentle way, "Why do you look at me like that, with your big eyes and that lovely smile on your face. Ah? You make me feel special, and at the same time nervous and shy. Hahahaha...". She started to laugh, and said, "Well, I think you are a very nice man, and a very nice person. I admit that I thought I was a little bit crazy to meet you. I was a little bit scared too. But once I saw you, and started to talk with you I felt very good, very good...". He said, "Thanks for being so kind with me, Katerina. I think you are a very decent, brilliant, and very beautiful young lady. A lady that any men in this world would like to marry.". She replied, "Thank you, and she smiled and blushed. I wish all the men were like you.". She suddenly stood up and took her cup of coffee.

It was already 9 pm, André thought it was kind of late for her, so he asked her, "Do you have lessons tomorrow? Do you have to wake up early tomorrow? Is it late for you now?". She said, "No. I don't need to go to the university tomorrow. I have to go on Friday.". She immediately asked him, "Are you going to meet again with... What's her name? Polina? Are you going to see her again?". He answered her, "She was going to call me tomorrow, or send me a message. But I really don't know if we will see each other again.". She immediately grabbed her purse, and took her phone out. She told him, "Let me make a phone call.". André thought she was going to call a cab.

So, after she finished talking and ended the call, he asked her, "Did you call a taxi?". She laughed and said, "Noooooooo... Hahahahaha... I called my mother...". He replied, "Ahhh... Is everything OK? Maybe she wants you to be home already? Maybe she is a bit worried". She laughed again and smiled, and said to him, "Noooooo... I told her everything was OK, that I was fine and...". Suddenly, and unexpectedly, she approached André, she left the cup and her phone over the table, and got closer to André, who was standing next to the sink. André, like expecting that she finished the sentence, said to her, "And... And... Is there any problem?". She suddenly stood in front of him, face to face, and told him, "I told my mother that I wasn't going to sleep at home tonight...". She started to laugh and smiled right in front of her his face, staring at him with her huge eyes... He was speechless... And she noticed that he got a bit nervous. And she said, "So, you don't mind if I stay with you tonight, right?". She then put her arms around his shoulders. He said to her, "Wow! Now this is totally unexpected. You took my breath away...". She added, "I know... And you took mine since the first moment I saw you today...". She grabbed the back part of his head and started to kiss his lips. And she said, "I'm all yours tonight, André. Do you want to be mine tonight?". She took his cup of coffee and left it over the table, then she took his hand and together they walked towards the bed. She told him to sit down, and said... "For your eyes only... My André...". And she started to take her clothes off. André was shocked... He had a lump on his throat. He simply couldn't believe what was going on. The last time he had sex was like 10 years ago. Katerina was standing naked in front of him. According to him, it was like if he was

watching the most perfect female and angelic-type of body. Pure perfection... He had his mouth like opened, because he was stunned. She grabbed his mouth and closed it, and said to him, "I'm sorry, I correct myself. Not only for your eyes, feel free to do whatever you wish, make me yours... Please.". He started to delicately caress her pale-white and porcelain-type of skin. He got down on his knees. He started to kiss her feet, her legs, her thighs, her belly... He stood up, and continued to kiss her breasts, her arms, her armpits, her neck... He went down on his knees again, and started to lick her pussy. She started to moan a bit, while she grabbed and softly pulled André's hair. According to André, she was amazingly wet. They both lied on the bed. She started to take his clothes off, she started to kiss his chest, she sat down on the edge of the bed and started to suck his cock, in the smoothest way a woman had ever sucked his cock. She suddenly jumped onto the center of the bed, she posed like in doggy style and said to him, "What are you waiting for? Get inside me...". And for the next 30 minutes André had one of the most beautiful sexual experiences in his life. In fact, thee most beautiful sex experiences until that point in his life. She had like 3-4 wild and sweet orgasms in those 30 minutes. He warned her that he was about to cum. She lied on her back and said, "Here... On my breasts...". The amount of semen that he ejaculated was amazing... And right after, she started to suck her cock again. He remained hard for some minutes. She said, "Amazing, your semen is as sweet as you are...". She hugged him and asked him to remain hugging her for the rest of the night, while their bodies where tangled together, entwined... And they fell asleep...

During the morning, she hugged him tightly, and started to kiss his and bite his chin, while she whispered, "I never thought I was going to feel this for you. But I remembered your words when we were in the restaurant, you told me to always follow my heart in whatever I wanted to do. And I just did that...". She started to suck his cock again, he was so hard that she jumped over him and they started to have sex again. He stroked her breasts with his hands, and the way she looked at him, and the way she rolled her eyes... She had two more orgasms in less than 15 minutes. It was simply amazing to feel how she tightened his cock with her pussy. He was about to cum again, and she said, "I want to feel you inside me... Cum inside me...". Mannnnnn... In that moment, you really don't think if you should or should not cum inside her. And like André said, if a goddess like her asks you to do something, you simply obey... Wow!

According to André, he felt that she was deeply hooked and in love with him, from one moment to another. This really blew his mind.

They had breakfast together, they took a shower together. And the happiness on her face was more than obvious, she looked extremely radiant, she was glowing. They went out together for a walk. She wanted him to know where she lived, and instead of taking a cab they decided to walk. André noticed that the people on the streets were looking at them. Suddenly, she took him by the hand, like if they were a couple. She started to tell him about some historical places of that city. She asked him if he wanted to visit some museums. They went to a couple of museums.

Two hours later they were walking through a very nice and big park. He took some pictures of her.

Suddenly, a lady started to call her by her name, "Katerina... Katerina...". A nice lady started to walk towards them... She looked like her, but a bit older. It was her mother... Katerina felt nervous, it was more than obvious. They started to talk in their language, but both of them smiled. Katerina's face was red, she blushed. Katerina introduced him to her mother, Svetlana. She was his height, and she looked at him deep into his eyes and smiled. She spoke a little bit of English and said, "Hello, nice to meet you André". She was like surprised, and immediately started talking with Katerina. She then apologized with him because they were speaking in their language. André said, "Please, no problem at all."

She then said goodbye. She was really on her way to a meeting in the city center. Svetlana worked as an accountant in the city hall. Katerina told him that her mother wanted him to go to their house that night, she wanted to invite him for dinner, and he didn't have to worry because she told her that he didn't eat animals. She then started to laugh because her mother asked her how old was him, and she told her the truth, and her mother couldn't believe it. Her mother had the same age as André, but she looked a bit older than him. Katerina then asked him what did he wanted to do. It was already 4 pm. Polina never wrote any message or called, so he didn't have to worry about that. Although, he didn't really want to see her again, not necessarily because he knew that she was going to have sex with him, but because he simply didn't feel so excited about her anymore.

André simply answered Katerina, "My dear, I'm all yours. I'll do what you want to do. I'm free.". She smiled at him, she put her hands on his face and started to kiss him while they were at the center of the park. She smiled

again, and said, "Would you like to know where I study?". He said, "Sure, please... Take me there.". "Let's take the metro, OK?", she said.

They arrived at her university. They had a walk, she saw some friends of her. She took him to meet some of her friends. The three girls also spoke English, so it was easy and funny for him. The three girls started to show that they were shy to talk in English, and the three of them didn't take their eyes off André.

After 10 minutes they left, she asked him again if he wanted to go straight to her apartment or if he wanted to go somewhere else, or maybe to his hotel. She then said, "I would like to go to your room for a while, and then we can go to my place. Is it OK with you?". He replied, "I think it's perfect, I would like to take a shower too." So, they took a cab and went straight to the hotel.

Once there, he went to the laptop and noticed he had messages from Polina in VK. He also noticed that I sent him some messages on Skype. I was online at that moment. He decided to have a Skype call with me, and he introduced me to Katerina. Man!!! He was so damn right! This girl was amazing... So beautiful physically and mentally. She had these huge eyes, I even felt nervous when I was talking to her. It was so funny.

Right after that call, André asked her if she needed to use the bathroom, because he wanted to take a quick shower. While he was taking a shower, she got inside the bathroom and took a shower with him too. After the shower they went to the bed and had sex. God! She was so perfect... Her beauty was outstanding. She asked him to cum inside of her again, but he didn't. He told her to not spoil her life by risking it in getting pregnant. He told her that it would be the worst thing she can do in her life,

at least for now. Happily, she understood and hugged him tightly. She said to him, "I feel that you love me, I never felt this from a man before.". He said to her, "Katerina, I love you more than what you can imagine... But I don't want to hurt you. You are very young, you are discovering life, you have goals, you have to achieve them. That's the most important thing for you right now. Let's go to your place and have dinner with your mother. Then we will talk about us, OK?". She smiled at him, and said, "OK, dear. I just wanted to let you know that I love you. And that you are the best thing that ever happened to me.". He hugged her tightly, kissed her forehead and whispered to her ear, "You are the best thing that ever happened to me too, OK?". He went to take a shower. Then she took a shower. They called a cab and went to her place.

Svetlana was setting the table when they arrived. It was a nice and cozy apartment. One funny detail, she was listening to music from the 1980s, a playlist she had in VK, with classic New Wave Pop bands. They started to talk about that type of music. He told her about his experience with music, that he owned a music store, that he was a music collector and that he wrote a guide about music. She got so surprised. She opened a bottle of wine and offered him a drink. The three of them sat at the living room first. She started to talk about Katerina, about all her life. That she was her only child, and that she is the only reason for her to be alive in this life. Katerina's father died in an accident near Kyiv when she was 15 years old. Svetlana told him how that incident affected her, and it almost killed her too. She had a chronic case of depression, she really loved her husband. She had to be strong to make Katerina keep going on as well. This was

so touching, André offered his condolences and felt very sad to hear all this story. Svetlana also apologized for telling him all this. She said, "I tell you all this because I never saw my daughter smile like she was smiling today in the park. I wanted to cry when I saw how she looked at you, André. And it reminded me when I met her father. After I left, towards the metro station, tears of joy started to come out from my eyes. Because I felt that she was really happy and in love with you, André." She suddenly stood up, grabbed her glass of wine and said to him, "Thank you! I don't know you too much, but I know you are a very smart and good man, with a big heart. I feel that...". André stood up and said, "Thank you, Svetlana. You are a wonderful mother, and now I know why Katerina is also such a wonderful young lady. Thank you for inviting me to your home. I'm very honored.". Svetlana then went to the kitchen, and Katerina was still embarrassed after what she heard. She smiled and kind of apologized with him. He immediately said, "You don't have to apologize about anything. Your mother is a very smart woman, with a big heart. I'm very pleased to meet her. Thank you, dear.". And he kissed her on the forehead. They then sat down at the table and started to eat and talk about everything. Of course, he had to answer an avalanche of questions. But he enjoyed doing it and telling everything they wanted to know. He also took advantage of this moment to explain and make it clear for both of them, what his plans were, what he had to do, and what he was going to be forced to do. He explained to Katerina and Svetlana about his situation, and what he has or doesn't have in his life. He was clear enough. He also was aware of what means for him to be in a country where he doesn't speak the language, and about the



probable scenarios for the following days and weeks. He made it clear that he had to leave in three weeks, not because he wanted, but because he had to. Svetlana asked him if he decided something. He told her that if it was for him, he would stay and marry Katerina immediately. But he had to ask and search information concerning all that. He was told it wasn't so easy.

Anyway, it was a nice chat after all. Svetlana told him that tomorrow she was going to call a friend she had that worked on the immigration office, and that she was going to explain to her friend the situation. By tomorrow night she would have all the information he needed. She also invited him to come back for dinner again. So they can talk about all this personally, the three of them. Svetlana liked him a lot, even if he explained to her all what he thought and went through his life, with the help of Katerina translating her some parts, because she really didn't understand English that much.

It was already midnight, Katerina called a cab for him. Katerina had lessons on Friday during the afternoon and part of the evening. She told him that after her lessons she would go to his hotel and pick him up.

André went back to the hotel that night. He arrived and stayed in front of his laptop... Thinking and thinking in everything that happened and what he talked that night. He thought that all this was quite interfering with his main goal for now. Even though, he really liked and loved Katerina. After all, what can a man with 43 years old expect? A beautiful lovely girl 20 years younger than him was in love with him. He really had to take a decision, and it wasn't going to be so easy. He had to be very smart. When a man like him takes a decision, he doesn't only think on the emotional side, he had to be rational, with

his feet on the ground. And he only had three weeks before he was going to leave the country.

It was 1 am and he decided to roll a joint and smoke a bit, next to the window, it was already late so there wasn't any real danger to be caught by somebody. He went back to the laptop.

He started to think in how to get rid of Polina. He sent her some messages on the phone and in VK, asking how was her, and why didn't she contact him. But she wasn't online since Tuesday. He then went to sleep at 4 am.

Friday morning, he woke up almost at noon. He had breakfast, took a shower, and he decided to be online in CGN for a while. He noticed that Polina was online on Thursday on CGN. It was strange. He decided to call her by phone. She didn't answer. 10 minutes later she wrote him a message that she could visit him in 30 minutes at his hotel room. He agreed. He already was prepared to dump her, in a very gentle and polite way of course. She arrived, he opened the door and she walked in. They both kissed each other on the cheek. He asked her to sit down. She started to ask him what did he do all these days, and he asked her the same. She told him that she arrived late on Thursday, that she didn't have Internet at home, she wasn't able to call him that day. He said it was OK. But he knew that she was online in CGN, and when it features that a "model" was online it's because she was in Public Chat, and according to the statistic records on the website she also had two long Private Shows, so she was lying. But he didn't say anything. He told her that she was going out with a friend he recently met in the city, that he went to her place to meet her family. She suddenly had a different look in her eyes, and started asking him who was this friend. He asked her to remember what he told her

even before the both of them met. That he already was going to meet somebody else, he said "Do you remember that I told you that?". She answered, "Yes, I remember.". She asked him, "Do you have plans for tonight?". He answered, "Yes, I have a meeting tonight". She immediately asked him, "What are you going to do now or in the afternoon?". He said, "I was going to stay here, maybe go to the supermarket, and I have some things to do on the laptop." And he immediately asked her, "And you? What plans do you have? Is there something I can do for you? Do you need anything?". She started to feel a little bit uncomfortable, and she asked him, "Where are you going tonight, are you going to meet with somebody, with a girl?". He explained to her, "Yes. I will go to my friend's apartment again. Her mother invited me for dinner.". She asked him, "Is she only your friend or your girlfriend?". He said, "Well, we've been going out since Wednesday. And she is a very important friend for me. And it's possible that we might start a serious relationship. We still have to talk about that, to be honest.". Suddenly she walked towards the window, and said, "Ohhhh... Well... I'm happy for you.". She started to act strange, like nervous, kind of upset. And he felt a bit sad for her, but she really wasn't the type of girl he wanted to take in a serious way. She lit a cigarette, and said, "I have problems, my mother is not feeling very well. I had to help her with some money.". He replied, "So sorry to hear that, Polina. But, do you need money now?". She said, "Maybe... Yes. I need some money.". He said, "How much do you need? Please tell me now, because maybe it will be more complicated in the following days.". She said, "I need like 200 dollars, maybe 300.". He immediately grabbed his wallet and gave her the

equivalent in Ukrainian currency. He said, "Please, take this. 350 dollars. I hope it helps you solve your problems a bit.". She looked at him and said, "André... Yes, it will help me solve them. Thank you very much!!". She wanted to kiss his lips, but he instead hugged her, and told her, "Please, go solve your problems first. We can see each other again if you want. OK? But now I really have to continue doing some things on the laptop, and I'll have a Skype call with a friend from Brazil. I'm sorry, but it's true.". She was kind of sad again, but she grabbed her coat and purse and headed to the door. He opened the door for her and gave her a kiss on the cheek and said goodbye.

André felt relieved, he smiled and said to himself, "It cost me some money, but I got rid of her... Yay!". He wasn't really celebrating what he just did, after all she was a very beautiful girl, that any men would die for. And he liked her a lot, but he knew she was lying, and for André lies were always something he disliked a lot. Besides, he now had other issues to solve, and he didn't have too much time left in Ukraine.

He decided to fool around a bit on CGN, like doing time. He already had some food on the fridge, so he was going to have that for lunch. He entered a room of a very sweet and cute girl, she only had like 2-3 days on the website, she was a non-nude girl. They started to chat for some minutes. She told him she was at home. He started to ask her about what did she think about this job, and other things. He turned on his webcam, and she immediately turned it on. She smiled and told him she thought she was 43 years old, but that he looked like 30. This girl was 22 and her name was Liza. He told her that he was in Ukraine, in Kharkiv. And she opened her eyes, like amazed

by what he said. She told him that she was in Kharkiv too. This was so funny. He told her that he was in a hotel since 1 week ago, near Sums kaya street and Gonchara street, four blocks away from Gorky Park. She told him that she was only 5 blocks away from that park. He started to laugh. And they continued to chat. She asked him what was he doing there, and he told her the truth. Well, part of it. And that he only had like 2 weeks left in the country. He asked her if she wanted to meet him. And she said, "Yes!! Yes!!! I would like that.". Her English was very good too. He replied, "Cool, let me know when would you like to meet me, so we can coordinate, OK?". He gave her his phone number, and she told him she would call him on Saturday afternoon.

It was already 4 pm, he warmed up some food, he had a light lunch. And then he started to search information on the Internet about the rules on getting married in Ukraine. He found out that as a tourist he had to marry 10-20 days before the limit of time expired to stay in the country, and that once he got married, and if he wanted to live in Ukraine, he had to go back to the Ukrainian embassy of his country and ask for a different type of visa, and only then he could come back and stay there for a determined time as resident. Once the process of getting the citizenship finished, he could remain in that country forever.

For sure it was a hell of a process, and it cost a lot. The other way to get the residency was to invest US\$ 100k in the country, an amount he didn't have. All this information kind of helped him to explain later to Katerina and her mother the entire situation. Katerina's mother didn't really know how he and her daughter really met. She told her mother that they met in VK. But her

mother didn't know the real goal that he had in going to Ukraine, she didn't know about the goal that he had in meeting cam-girls for the book he was writing. So, he had to think very well what was he going to say, because he didn't want to spoil the possibility of getting married with Katerina in the future.

He waited for Katerina, and she arrived at 8 pm. They both went to the supermarket, he wanted to buy a bottle of wine that her mother liked, and also a nice cake.

He didn't tell her yet about the information he read during the afternoon. He wanted to wait until the three of them were going to talk about all this.

They arrived at her place, they sat down at the table. The three of them drank a special cocktail that Svetlana made. The conversation began... Svetlana shared the information she had from her friend at the immigration office, and it was exactly the same information he had, so he really didn't have to talk too much about that. Katerina felt very sad after hearing all that. He explained to them what he had in mind, and what he thought about all this, and perhaps what was the best thing to do in this case. He also told Svetlana about his goals and what he really wanted to do in Ukraine, and that meeting Katerina was supposed to be only a friendship, that he really didn't planned to fall in love or start a relationship, and what happened between him and Katerina was a surprised for him. He really didn't expect that Katerina, being so young, was going to fall in love with him, and so fast. Svetlana understood everything very well, but Katerina was very sad. He told them that he wanted to talk with Katerina in the following days in order to find out what was the best thing to do. Svetlana asked André to give her his phone number and to add her in VK.

While they were eating they kept talking about all this, but he really wanted to talk with Katerina alone, so he managed the situation in order to not say what he wanted to talk with her alone. He just kept saying that he would come out with the best for the both of them.

After they finished eating, they went to the living room. Svetlana invite him to go with her and Katerina to the village where she owned a small country house. She wanted to spend Sunday and Monday over there with them together. He agreed.

That night Katerina felt very demotivated after what she heard, she was very sad. She wanted to go with him to the hotel and spend the night with him. But he suggested it was better if she stayed home because he was going to think about all this and was going to be busy talking with his friend in Brazil and with some relatives in the US. She understood. He asked her to please stay calm, to relax, because she wasn't going to gain anything by being sad. She called a cab for him, and he finally left.

Once in the hotel, he took a long shower, he smoked a bit of the joint. He had a Skype call with me and told me everything what happened, and what he thought he was going to do.

It was already 3 am, and his phone rang... It was Katerina telling him that she couldn't sleep, and that she wanted to visit him at the hotel tomorrow after she woke up. He asked her to visit him in the afternoon, and that he wanted to go out with her. She felt a bit better and finally went to sleep.

Saturday, André woke up at 11 am, he noticed he had a message on his phone, it was from Liza. He called her, and they had a short conversation. They were going to meet on Tuesday, he explained that he was going to be

in a town nearby on Sunday and Monday, and that he already had a meeting during that day. She agreed, and told him she was going to call him on Tuesday morning. André was thinking that it was enough in meeting these cam-girls, he felt kind of tired already. He now wanted to focus on what was going to be his next step after meeting Liza. He also thought about Katerina, and the beautiful relationship that he had with her. It was a wonderful relationship, but at the same time he felt that it was a bit complicated for now. He thought that she really deserved something better, he thought that he was too old for her in many aspects, and that she really needed somebody younger with a better position or status in her own society. He really loved her, that's why he thought about all these things, he wasn't being selfish at all. He wanted the best for her, he wanted for her something that made her really happy, and not only for one week or two, but for the rest of her life, or at least during all the process of a young person that discovers and experiences so many different things in life during the decade of the 20s. Anyway... Time will tell...

Katerina arrived at 3 pm. She had this sad look in her eyes, mixed with uncertainty and confusion. As soon as she arrived and hugged him, she said, "I just want you to know, my dear André, that I really love you, and that I won't just marry you because of the legal status so you can remain in my country. I would marry you because I love you, and I would really like to spend my life with you, living with you, and have a family with you. I want you to be the father of my children."

Wow! That was a serious statement.

He said, "I know what you mean, I know what you feel, I understand you very well. And trust me, my beautiful



princess, I would also like to do exactly everything what you just said. But, we have to solve this with our brains too. We have to be very smart. We are talking about your future here. You are very young. You have your goals, you have to achieve everything that makes you feel complete with yourself, individually. I am just a complement for you. But first, you have to develop each and every thing that will fulfill your objectives. You are already in a ship that is in the middle of the ocean. You have to make it to the other side first. Don't leave it, don't jump off the ship. It will be the worst thing you can do in your life. It would be a terrible mistake. You have to finish what you started. That is the priority here, you have to recognize it, you have to realize that. That's the main thing for your self-development." She said to him, "You told me that you think I'm very smart, right? Well, I am. I really think I am. I will finish all that, that is a fact. I want to do that, even if in the end I really don't care about it anymore, but I will finish it. But... I know what I want, I know what I need, and I need to be with you too. Even if for some time you have to go back and then come back, I will always be here waiting for you. I promised that to myself, and I promise you that. I don't only see you as my beloved man, I see you as my guiding light, André."

Once again, he was speechless after listening to such words. They hugged each other. He noticed that she had tears in her eyes. He asked her to please not cry, because it wasn't what they needed. He said to her, "Please, let's go out, OK? Let's have a walk, let's go for lunch or dinner, let's spend this day together, let's plan what we can do in the future. We need to do that now. OK?". She said, "Yes, you know what to do. I trust in everything you say. Let's go."

They went for a walk, they had lots of fun together. They went all over the city, to many different places. They went to her favorite Italian restaurant. Her mother called her when they were having dinner. She told her mother that everything was fine, and that tomorrow morning they both were going to the apartment, and then the three of them would go to the village. Katerina was very happy again, with a big smile on her face. She was a true goddess, the perfect woman for him.

They decided to go back to the hotel at 8 pm. They had another passionate hot night full of pleasure. Both of them fell asleep naked and hugging each other.

Sunday morning... After they had breakfast, and after they took a shower together, they went straight to her apartment.

The three of them then went to a nearby village in a cab, on the outskirts of Kharkiv.

André was surprised, it was a beautiful place, a beautiful small and cozy house. It had everything, even Internet. Svetlana told Katerina to show him the vegetable garden and the rest of the house. She was going to prepare Katerina's favorite dish, lasagna. Svetlana told André, "Don't worry, it doesn't have any type of meat. Katerina was always fond of vegetables, and me too.". He smiled and said "Thank you! Thanks for your kindness.". She smiled at him in a very peculiar way, like trying to tell him something with her eyes. He just smiled at her.

Katerina took him by the hand and she showed him the place. Once they were back inside the house, Svetlana told him to feel like in his own house, and she even joked by saying, "Sooner or later, if you stay with my Katerina, this will be your house too.". Once again he just smiled

and said, "Thank you. Thank you very much. It's a real pleasure for me to hear such words."

A few hours later, and after the three of them were talking about several things and having fun, Svetlana opened a bottle of champagne and she gave a toast for the happiness of the both of them, and then said looking at her daughter, "I wish your father was here.". She started to shed tears from her eyes and apologized with him. She hugged Katerina, and asked him to join them by hugging themselves for some moments. It was a very emotional moment for Katerina and her mother. She told me later that they were really celebrating her father's birthday that day. He really felt that he was part of that family, he really felt something deep within himself. Something that was very touching for him.

Svetlana told him that he was going to sleep with Katerina in her room, but joked by saying, "Just don't make too much noises at night. I'm a lonely woman and I don't want to envy the both of you.". They all laughed together. It was funny, but he really felt very good.

But, like he explained to both of them that night talking next to the fireplace, "If I stay like an illegal alien in this country, what can I do? I can't work, I can't earn money, I can't do anything. I can even risk the entire relationship by getting deported. It would really be unfair. And I want to live in Ukraine. I would never ask Katerina to live with me in Perú, it's not even the place where I would like to live. No way! Not even in the US. I really would like to live here, even if I never learn the language, I don't care about those things. I simply would like to be with the both of you. I am expecting that my brother sells the property that my father owned in the US, but that can take some

time. Who knows when? It can be next week or it can be next year.”.

Around midnight, they all went to sleep.

They woke up at 9 am. Svetlana already had the breakfast ready on the main table. She was outside talking with a neighbor.

During the day the three of them went for a walk. It really was a beautiful and calm village. They went back to the house, the three of them were having a rest and a soft drink in the terrace. Svetlana asked André to tell her about that lifestyle he had years ago, she told him that she was very curious, because when she was young she had a very good friend that was also in something similar, concerning vegetarianism, Buddhism, to wander and seek for wisdom. He told them the entire story, but briefly, so they didn't get bored. He also decided to talk about the effects of certain substances on the human brain. Svetlana told him that she tried Cannabis once in a while, but she really didn't do it anymore because of her daughter. Katerina couldn't believe it, "Mom, you tried weed?". Hahahaha... Katerina never smoked weed, she only used to smoke cigarettes once in a while and drink a bit, like the average girls of her age. But she told them that she had a very good friend in the university that smoke weed, and she couldn't deny she was curious. André, as an expert on this topic, explained to them to make it very clear for them. He confessed that he still smoked some good quality weed, but he was retired from the major psychedelic substances and that he really didn't need to do it anymore. He told them that he brought some "buds" of a very good quality of weed, and that he still had a couple of "buds" left. He thought that the place, the moment, the company, was perfect in case

they wanted to smoke something good. Katerina started to laugh, while Svetlana looked at him and smiled, and said, "I agree. You have some here?". He said, "Yes! And I will roll it in front of both of you, so you can witness by yourself that it's all natural."

The three of them sat in the table, while he proceeded to roll the joint. He warned them and suggested to only smoke a couple of hits, so they can warm up and feel good, without going straight to a deep psychedelic experience that may cause some fear on both them. They both laughed and smoked a bit.

After a few minutes, they both started to feel "happy". He suggested that they can put some music they were used to listened to, and they liked a lot. Katerina suddenly said, "Wow! It feels like if I'm listening to it for the first time." He laughed. Svetlana said to him, "You don't mind if we eat the same like yesterday, right?". He said, "Of course not."

The three of them went to the vegetable garden. They had a great time there, talking about many things, sharing their thoughts, anecdotes and experiences. After a while, they drank a little bit of beer before having lunch. At 8 pm Svetlana called a cab, and they went back to Kharkiv.

Katerina had lessons on Tuesday morning, and she had to spend all the afternoon and part of the evening studying with her classmates. So, they weren't going to see each other that day.

André went back to the hotel. It was 11 pm and we had a Skype call.

Then he took a shower and ate something. He felt good, relaxed, he started to do his usual stuff in VK, posting things, chatting with some people, nothing serious.

Tuesday morning, he woke up around 11. He got the call from Liza. She asked him to meet her in a stand inside the park that was only a few blocks away.

It was 2 pm, and when he arrived she was already there. Man, this girl was so beautiful, she had this innocent look in her amazing green-blue eyes. She was shorter than him. She was excited, because he gave her some presents. Now he got rid of all that stuff, there were no more gifts left. She lived with some roommates, so they couldn't really go to her place, she preferred not to. They walked a bit in the park, he told her what he was doing. He invited her to go drink something, they went to a café nearby, she told him several things about her studies, she wanted to be a psychologist. They talked about CGN and how it affects certain girls, she always agreed with him. She told him she really didn't want to be there, but she needed money for her expenses, and another type of job would take her more time and wouldn't earn what she really needed, and that she only had planned to work in CGN until late summer. He asked her how much did she need monthly, she said like 200 dollars to not worry about anything. He asked her something, "If you had that amount of money every month, would you still work on CGN?". She answered, "No! I really hate working there, dealing with those type of men... No! No! You are the only man I really felt comfortable with, and when I saw you I knew that you were a nice guy.". He laughed and smiled at her, and said, "What are you going to do now, are you busy, do you have plans?". She said, "No, I was planning to spend the afternoon with you. Why do you ask?". He said, "I need to go to a nearby shopping center. Would you like to come with me, please?". She said, "Yeah, sure...". They walked to the place that was some

blocks away, and he went to an ATM there. He took some money out, the equivalent of 2,000 dollars in Ukrainian currency. He put the money inside his jacket. He asked her to go with him to a small gift shop, he bought a nice purse and put the money inside, he then put the purse in a nice paper bag. They went outside the store and he told her, "Liza, be smart please, don't work on CGN anymore starting today. Delete your account, please... And promise yourself, and promise me, that you will never work on that type of job again, OK?". She was kind of shocked when he was telling her all this. He also said, "Here is a gift for you, there is 2,000 dollars inside this small purse. You have the rest of the year covered, right? And don't worry, I'm not expecting anything in return, just that you promise me that you will go home now, and delete that account in CGN. Deal?". She was speechless, she only replied by barely trying to speak the words out of her mouth, "What?... Why???... Oh my god...". She started to shed tears, she was overwhelmed. He told her, "Please, OK?". She suddenly hugged him, without saying anything. She knew that amount of money was more than enough. She started to talk to him in her language, it was funny... She was still shocked. She finally started to talk to him in English, "But... But... Thank you, thank you... Oh my god...". He told her to go home immediately, to take care of that money, and to keep it safe.

They both went out of the shopping center. She went straight home. It was only a few blocks away. He asked her to call him once she arrived. He went to the supermarket and then went to cook something to his room.

Since that day, things became like a routine for him.

Some days he went to visit Katerina and his mother. Some days she stayed in the hotel room with him, talking and planning what will they both do once he had to leave the country.

They used to go out for lunch or dinner. One night he invited Katerina and her mother to that exclusive restaurant where Katerina and him went the day they met.

We also had several Skype calls during those days.

And... 10 days passed.

He had to leave on a Monday night, but he still didn't know where, or what exactly to do.

He even thought about staying in Ukraine and forgetting about everything else.

Liza called him several times. They saw each other one more time, in the same café where they went the day they met. After that, they kept staying in touch through VK. He noticed that she was interested in him more than a friend, but he managed the situation. He told him that he really couldn't start any type of relationship, because he had to travel again. He noticed that she felt sad.

He was really involved with Katerina, and he didn't want to spoil the relationship with her, at least not during the days he had left in the city.

Katerina was a bit busier those days too, she had exams and had to study a lot.

One afternoon he got a call from Svetlana, she wanted to talk with him, but not in her apartment. She asked him if they can meet in a café near the hotel. He agreed, and they met on a Wednesday afternoon.

They started to talk about what he was going to do, and what type of agreement did he and Katerina came up with. She told him that she really liked him, and that



Katerina was deeply in love with him, and whatever he had in mind to do, or whatever happened, she asked him to please be honest with her and always treat her kindly. He absolutely agreed with her, he asked her to not worry about anything, that he wasn't a teenager, a pervert or a womanizer. He also told her that it wasn't going to be easy for Katerina, and it wasn't going to be easy for him either. Once again they talked about the options he had, and perhaps what was really going to happen in the near future, concerning his own pending process to go back to the US, the property that had to be sold. He also wanted to finish and translate the books he wrote in the past, and so on.

Katerina called her while they were together, she spoke with her in their language, he really couldn't understand anything. Once she ended the call, she told him it was her, but that she didn't want her to know that she was with him, at least not yet. He also wanted to ask her something, a big favor, and that he didn't want her to tell Katerina either, at least not yet. They both laughed and smiled. He then took an envelope out of his jacket and put it over the table. He told her that in that envelope there was the equivalent of 5,000 dollars, and that he wanted her to keep it for Katerina, just in case anything happened, and that she can spend that money in paying her university or whatever they needed the money for. She was shocked, and at first she doubted in taking it, but he slid the envelope to her, and told her that this is for Katerina, it's for her own good, so that she didn't have to worry about anything until he came back. She took the envelope and put it on her purse. For her it was like serious money, after the economic situation that country was going through.

After 30 minutes they both left, and she told him to visit them at her apartment on Thursday night.

André went back to the hotel, he now had like \$30k in his account. He needed to start thinking seriously on his next step. He was more than satisfied and happy with everything that happened during his trip to Ukraine.

In fact, he really never thought in getting involved with such a beauty queen like Katerina. But, he was also happy enough that he met the other two girls. He now was able to say that he met three young goddesses from Ukraine. It was Thursday, he only had 4 days left before he had to leave Ukraine.

Katerina was free that night, and he already was going to visit her and her mother at their place at 7 pm.

During the afternoon he decided to spend some time in CGN. And without even wanting it, he saw a girl that he always wanted to chat with since months ago, but she wasn't online too often. She wasn't a non-nude girl, she sometimes used to get topless in Public Chat, and she also had a high cam score in CGN.

He entered her room, and there were only two other guys, that probably were having a chat with her in PM. As soon as he was in her room, he got a PM from her saying "Hello". He replied and introduced himself. He really wanted to chat with her and get to know her, but without tipping her. Even if he had some tokens in CGN he really just wanted to test her. Maybe she was only a cam-girl that liked to get tokens and nothing else. He told her that he didn't have tokens and that he didn't want to take her time, after all it was a job for her. She wrote him that it everything was OK, and that she wasn't really in CGN for the money. She asked him the ordinary stuff, for his name, where was he from, etc. She had in her profile that

she was from Belarus. He decided not to tell her that he was in Ukraine, at least not yet.

She told him he had a very interesting profile, and asked him if he had a webcam. He said, "Yes, let me turn it on.". And as soon as she saw him, she completely changed the look in her eyes, and she even blushed, her eyes were like on fire. She wrote him, "Wow! You are very cute, and you look so young. I'm so surprised.". He only smiled and said, "Thank you. Maybe you need glasses?". She replied, "Hahaha... And you are also funny...". She asked him, "Where are you now? What time is it over there?". He told her, "Right now I'm in Kharkiv, in Ukraine, since 15 days ago. And I have to leave the country next Monday.". She replied, "Wow! And what are you doing there?". He answered, "I came to meet a couple of friends, and simply visit this country because I was always interested in knowing how it was.". She replied, "And where will you go after?". He said, "I still don't know, I have to decide that this weekend.". She said, "Wow! Do you have Skype?". He said, "Yes, I do". And he wrote the name of his Skype account. Immediately she sent him a friend request on Skype, which he accepted. They suddenly started to chat on Skype, and she said, "I will log off from CGN now. Is it possible if I call you here, or maybe you are busy?". He started to feel excited and nervous, and replied, "Sure, of course. I'm not busy at all". She logged off from CGN and called him on Skype.

He was speechless, he could barely assimilate all this, it was going so fast... She said with a big smile on her face and her blue-gray eyes wide open, "Hello!!! My real name is Olga. I was born in Ukraine but I live in Moscow now." He replied, "Wow! Olga, nice to meet you.".

Now... One second, I want to say something about this girl called Olga.

This girl was serious stuff.

And I mean, REAL SERIOUS STUFF!!!

This girl was hot as hell, extremely beautiful, with such physical perfection like no other. I really mean it. She didn't have the beauty type of Katerina, who was also extremely beautiful and perfect, Katerina had the innocent type, the "proper girl" type of beauty. But Olga, had a stunning, extremely sexual, and tempting type of thing. She had this hypnotizing look in her eyes, and she spilled sensuality through every pore of her outstanding body. Maybe she was a real bitch, maybe not. But I'm talking here about external patterns of beauty only. Even the most faithful man in this world could feel tempted to taste this young woman. She had such a body any man or woman would die for. And all 100% natural. She wasn't that type of "cool" girl with tattoos or implants.

No... No... No!! This girl could easily be considered a true goddess of love, or perhaps a true goddess of sex. What she emitted with her beauty... My lord!!! Any man could easily feel a sting on his balls when staring at her. She was a true flaming beauty. A girl on fire. One of a kind!!! She could easily enchant you with her body and her smile, and if you looked into her eyes... Man!!! This girl was really dangerous. A man could easily through away all his rationality and become crazy or lose control.

That's why André was really nervous, he told me that a hundred times.

And she... This girl called Olga... She had a crush on him!! Why?

Only she can answer that.

And for sure, with no doubt, that this girl could have any type of men she wanted on his knees and drooling his mind off... Hahahahaha...

But, what I can guess is, that maybe she saw in André something she didn't see in any other men she met before.

She really wanted him, and she wanted him now!

He started to test her, and "play" with her. André was really good at this, not in order to take advantage of anybody, but to protect himself.

She was 26 years old, by the way. So she wasn't such a teenage-minded girl. She also spoke English very good. He asked her, "Is that your place, your apartment?". She answered, "Yes. I live alone now. I used to live with a friend, but she went to live to Italy like a month ago."

She took her laptop and showed him almost the entire place, and she walked through a mirrored wall and he saw her walking. She was so fucking gorgeous from head to toes. She didn't even need to polish her toes!!! Like I said, she was 100% natural. And for sure, she knew that she was a gorgeous woman.

She told him that CGN was like a part-time income, that she really worked in language institute teaching English. She told him she had a car, and that she was really paying to the bank for the apartment. She didn't rent an apartment. It was on the last floor of a tall building in an upscale area of Moscow.

André was amazed. And they spent like an hour talking to each other.

She had a cat too. She asked him, "Do you like cats?". He said, "Yes. They are better and more intelligent than dogs." She started to laugh. And then asked him, "Why did you visit my room in CGN?". He replied, "Because I

saw you like two months ago, only for a few seconds, and then you went offline. I was curious to know you.". She said, "Awwwww... So sweet. And why did you wanted to know me? Why were you curious?". He said, "Well... I have to confess that you are the most beautiful and sensual woman I ever saw in my life. You really are a charming young lady. And I like the look you have in your eyes.". She blushed, and he noticed that immediately. She said, "Wow! You are so sweet... Thank you very much. Are you married or involved with somebody?". He said, "Well, not really. I never married and I don't have children. I'm free for now.". She asked him, "Have you ever been to Moscow?". He said, "No.". She replied, "Well if you want to visit Moscow, knowing that you are so close, let me know. I would really like to meet you.".

André was shocked!

He said, "Wow! Really? It would be a privilege and honor to meet you, Olga. I will search for tickets and search for a hotel in Moscow.".

She said, "No, no, no... No way! You can stay in my place. I have three bedrooms here. Let me know when you have your ticket, and I will pick you up.".

Holy fuck! André didn't even think about it twice.

His decision was already taken. He would visit her.

He said to her, "Wow! But... Hey, you really don't know me, I don't want to interrupt you nor bother you.".

She laughed and said, "Hey, relax... I like you, and I saw in your eyes that you are a good man, a true gentleman. So, please let me know when you take your decision. But, I won't be in CGN for the following weeks, so contact me here.". He said, "OK, Olga... I will write you tomorrow.". She said, "Deal!!".

They ended the call. André was sweating, he needed to take a shower.

Now, he had to think very good several things before taking any decision. He really had three options.

The first option was to take a bus to Kyiv, go to the airport and go back to Lima.

The second option was to forget about the return tickets to Lima, and go to Kyiv and catch a plane to Moscow.

The third option was, avoid going back to Kyiv and simply take the train from Kharkiv to Moscow, which was an overnight trip. He would arrive on Tuesday morning at the central train station in Moscow.

He finally opted for the third option.

Now, concerning Katerina. This was obviously more difficult for him to decide, because it really involved his and her feelings. He wanted to avoid hurting her or demotivating her. He really loved her and wanted to come back and stay with her, but with more money and a better plan, so they could remain together without any immigration type of problem.

But... He had two options in order to solve this issue.

One was to lie and tell her he was going back to Lima.

The other was to tell her the truth. To tell her that he was going to Moscow to meet a "friend", and that he will stay there for some days or weeks. After all, he really had to kill time, and he really didn't want to go back to Lima, especially after this experience.

Now, how would he explain all this to Katerina?

He really needed to be very gentle, and very smart.

But, like he told me, "I love that girl. I hate lies, and she doesn't deserve to be cheated. If she doesn't agree with all this, or if she ends up forgetting about me or dumping me, at least I'll feel good that I never lied to her. I will

explain her all this in the clearest way possible. After all, she is very delicate, emotionally speaking, and she is also in love. I don't want to break her heart, or do any type of emotional damage. She really knows that I came here to meet some "friends", not only to meet her. She knew about that since the beginning. Not because it was only something personal, but for the experience in order to accomplish all this research I've been doing since more than a year. For the book I want to write about this."

It was still Thursday. After his shower he went to the supermarket and bought some stuff. Then he cooked something in the hotel room and had a light meal.

At 7 pm, Katerina arrived to the hotel to pick him up and go together to her place.

He noticed that she was a little bit upset and that something bothered her. He asked her what was going on. She was upset because she had her period, and it kind of spoiled her plans for the weekend with André. He told her to please overcome that. That it wasn't the end of the world. After all, she should be happy that she wasn't pregnant, after he ejaculated inside her when they had sex the second time. He felt relief in one sense. She smiled and said, "Yeah, you're right. Whatever... Hahahaha...". They both arrived to her place, and her mother was already expecting them with a bottle of wine. She wanted to make a toast for Katerina and for André. Katerina really didn't know anything about the meeting her mother had with André. She was going to tell her about that later. They sat at the table and started to eat. They had a long talk about what was going to happen, and what were the possible options that he had for all this. He told both of them about his trip to Moscow first, and that then he was going back to his country, but that there was also a



possibility that he was going to spend some months in Brazil. He also said that he decided to tell all this to both of them, so that he was being clear enough with the two of them concerning his plans and future steps. It seemed that Katerina was OK with everything he said. And her mother too. But Svetlana, and in front of Katerina, asked him something, "André, I want to ask you something very important. And please, I beg you, I want you to be honest with me and with my daughter. I don't think it's too much to ask you this, right? Just tell us here on this table the truth. Would you really like to come back and stay with Katerina? Yes, or no? Will you really come back? Is that what you really want?". Katerina felt a bit embarrassed, she blushed and looked at him first and then to her mother, and said, "Mom, please... You think I'm a teenager? Don't make him feel uncomfortable, please. It sounds like the inquisition here... Hahahaha.". Svetlana laughed, but André immediately said, "No, no, no... Katerina, your mother is 100% right in asking me that here and in front of you. After all, she is your mother and loves you, and she wants the best for you. In fact, thank you Svetlana for asking me that. I will come back as soon as possible, that's my plan, that's what I want. Of course, if Katerina still wants that, because this period might take some time, and I can't really tell exactly until when. But I want to comeback, sit on this table again with the both of you.". Svetlana immediately said, "Listen my dear Katerina, I'll tell you something in front of him now. This man really loves you, don't you ever dare in letting him go, okay? If you are really in love with him, never let him go, and show him respect and devotion, not because he is older than you, but because he simply cares about you with all his heart. Did you understand me?". Katerina was

more than embarrassed, she started to laugh, and said, "OK, mom. I promise you that I'll take your advice.". Svetlana raised her cup and said, "Cheers!".

This was all fucking funny for him, no doubt. But the main thing was that André felt good. Of course, he was starting to feel sad. He really didn't want to leave, he really wanted to stay forever. But... He didn't choose that option. And the adventure would continue...

It was already 11 pm, and Katerina called a cab for André. He went to the hotel. We had a Skype call for over an hour.

Friday morning, he went to the train station with Katerina and bought the train ticket to Moscow for Monday night. They went back to the hotel in a cab, and on that same cab she went to the university.

André wrote a message to Olga on Skype. She was online, and asked him to call her. They talked for an hour, and he told her that he had his train ticket and that he would arrive on Tuesday morning. She told him that she would pick him up, and that once he arrived and got out from the train, he would have to walk to the food court of the train station, on the second floor. She was going to be there on the table area in front of KFC.

Bingo! Everything was done and coordinated.

Besides, he didn't need a visa for Russia. And according to him, Olga was very happy and excited about all this too.

Katerina called André that night, telling him that her mother told her that the both of them met in a café some days ago. She was curious to know what did she tell him. He told her everything what they talked about, with the exception of the money that he gave Svetlana.

On Saturday, he spent all day and night at Katerina's place.

On Sunday, André invited them for lunch, they went to an Italian restaurant. Then they went to the apartment.

It was already Sunday night, and it was the last night of André in Kharkiv. He started to feel sad, very sad.

We had a Skype call, and he told me, "I hope I'm not making a huge mistake. I know that I'm not, it can't be a mistake, really. But I only wish to come back here as soon as possible."

Monday morning, Katerina arrived, she didn't have lessons. They had lunch together in the hotel room.

In the afternoon, he left the hotel room and dropped the key in the reception hall. They both took a cab to her place.

At 8 pm, the three of them went to the train station. Katerina started to cry when he was about to leave. He would never forget her face and how the tears came out from her eyes. He asked her to not cry, because he was going to feel worse during the trip. Svetlana told him that they will be waiting for him.

He finally said goodbye, and stepped into the train.

Goodbye Katerina... Goodbye Svetlana...

Goodbye Kharkiv... Goodbye Ukraine...

Now... Step four. Mission number four... Olga!

"Moscow, here we go...", he said to himself.

He arrived at 9 am, it was snowing. He went straight to the food court. But it was empty, there wasn't anybody there. He sat down on a table for a while. Some people started to arrive to the food court.

After 15 minutes, he saw a gorgeous girl that grabbed his attention, she was coming up on the escalator. It was Olga...

She saw him and started to smile while she walked towards him. He stood up and noticed that she was shorter than him. She gave him a big hug and said, "I'm sorry for the delay. It's rush hour and the traffic jam is terrible." He said, "Please, don't worry. Everything is OK. Thanks for coming...". She said, "Let's go?". He said, "Sure, please. You're my guide.". She smiled and started asking him how was the trip. If he slept on the train, etc. They went to the parking lot, and she had this cool and nice silver BMW. He was surprised and said, "Hey, nice car...". They both laughed.

They went straight to her apartment. It was a very cool and neat neighborhood. There was a small park in front of the building where she lived. They went inside to the building's parking lot, and went to her apartment.

It was an amazing apartment, a big one for sure, with all the comforts anyone can ask for. It had a big balcony with a spectacular view, but it was still snowing so they stayed inside. She said, "Please, André, put yourself comfortable, this is the bedroom for you. I guess you want to rest or take a shower, do whatever you want. There is some food in the kitchen. Please, imagine it's your place.". She was such a host, and the bedroom was amazing. It also had a bathroom inside. That was perfect. She told him, "I'm going out to visit a friend and I'll come back at 1 pm, OK?". She gave him the password for the wi-fi, and told him that she also had Skype on her phone, and if he needed to ask her something he just had to send her a message. She added, "When I come back, I'm free for the rest of the afternoon and evening. We will go out if you want, we will go and buy a chip for your phone too, OK?". He said, "Yeah, OK. Thanks a lot.". And she left.

He ate something, he took a shower, he smoked in the balcony. He sent some messages to Katerina and Svetlana, saying that he arrived well, and that he was in an apartment where he had a bedroom for himself.

It was already 1 pm, and Olga arrived. André was still on his laptop listening to music.

She suddenly started calling him, "André... André...". He answered, "Olga?". She went to his room and hugged him and kissed him twice on his cheeks, and said, "Let's go to the living room and listen to some music there and let's talk, OK?". He agreed. She asked him if he wanted to drink some Coca-Cola, he said, "Yes, sure.". Now that he was relaxed and assimilated all the trip and the place where he was, he realized how beautiful this girl was, she was even hotter than how she looked like through a webcam. He simply couldn't believe it. He was with Olga in her apartment. She was wearing a top, tights and was barefoot. They both sat down in a very nice and comfortable couch. They started to talk about his plans, his experience in Ukraine, and about his past too. He also told her about the books he wrote and the one he wanted to write in the near future. She told him her story and how she ended up in Moscow. She was born in Kyiv, her mother was Ukrainian and his father was Russian. She also had a brother that lived in Austria since many years ago. Her father died five years ago, her mother lived in Kyiv with her sister. Her father was a rich man that owned a company, when he died she and his brother decided to get rid of that company and sold it. They split the money with her mother. Olga decided to come to Moscow, so she was already four years living in that place. Olga asked him, "And how long would you like to stay in Moscow?". He answered her, "Well, I really didn't think about that

yet, to be honest. I know I can stay 3 months, but if I need to leave before, I'll leave. No problem with that at all. I'm free.". She kind of interrupt him in a sweet way, and said, "Please, you can stay here as much as you want. OK? You are my guest, and I'm very happy that you are here with me. OK?". He said, "Thank you very much, dear Olga. But, if you really want me to be here and feel comfortable you'll have to accept that I'll give you some money. Otherwise, I'll go to a hotel. I want to feel good in sharing some money with you, OK? If you say no, I'll leave right now... Seriously.". And he started to laugh and smiled at her. She said, "Well, if you put it that way. Deal!". She immediately asked him, "So, and what would you like to do now? You want to go out? Please, let me know.". He said, "Yeah, I would like to go out to a supermarket. Is there any supermarket you suggest? Let's buy some stuff for you, for me, for us. Please...". She said, "OK, yeah... I go to a supermarket nearby, we can go walking if you want, or we can go in the car. Depends on how much you want to buy.". He said, "Yeah, I think we should go in the car. At least this time, so we don't have to be carrying bags. Next time we can go walking or I can go by myself.". She replied, "OK, let's go. Are you ready?". He said, "Absolutely, let's go...". So they went to the supermarket that was only three blocks away, and it was a cool supermarket, it had everything he was looking for. Now, Moscow wasn't a cheap city, if you compared it with any city in Ukraine. Prices were kind of double or even triple than in Ukraine. But it was OK, he was covered for the time he would stay in Moscow. They went back to the apartment. She also smoked, so they smoked together in the balcony. She asked him, "Do you drink beer or any type of alcohol?". He answered her,

"Well, not really. In special occasions I accept to drink something.". She said, "That's great, I like to drink some beer, if you don't mind. I would like to drink a beer with you. I have some in the fridge. And if you want we can go out to eat something.". He said, "Cool, sounds great. Thank you very much.". She opened two bottles of Heineken and they sat in the living room. She asked him, "So, how come you are not married, and you don't have a family?". He answered her, "Well, it's really a long story. I had some girlfriends in the past. But, since like 10-13 years ago approximately, I really had a different lifestyle, away from the common stuff, like I told you before. And I really never met a woman that I could've really say... Awww... This is the one... You know what I mean, right?". She laughed and smiled at him, and he asked her, "What about you, it's not so common that a gorgeous lady like you isn't married yet. What's your story?". She answered him, "Well, I had a long time relationship when I was in Kyiv, like for 5-6 years. But it was also one of the reasons why I left Kyiv. Hahahaha... I found out that he was cheating on me with a friend of ours like for the last 2 years of our relationship. Since then, I only had a couple of occasional boyfriends.". He said, "Wow! I'm so sorry to hear that. That guy definitely had serious problems in cheating on you. My god!". They both smiled and laughed. She said, "Cheers for that!! Hahahaha...". They both raised and clinked their bottles.

He noticed that she had a sort of pipe and a sort of bong on one of the shelves in the living room, so he asked her, "I see you have a bong and a pipe. Are they simple ornaments, or you use them?". And he smiled at her. She started to smile and also laughed, she answered him, "Well... Well... Sometimes I like to smoke some weed... I

hope it doesn't bother you.". He started to laugh, and said, "I can't believe this... Hahaha...". She said to him, "Why do you say that? Is there any problem?". He said, "No, absolutely no problem at all.". She said, "Are you against that, or against any type of drugs?". He started to laugh again, and said, "My dear Olga... My dear Olga... I even have two "buds" left that I brought for the entire trip.". She started to laugh hard, and said, "What? What?? Are you kidding me?". He said, "Nooooooooooo... I'm not kidding.". He stood up, went to the bedroom and came back with the two "buds". She was surprised and said, "They look like the weed they sell in Amsterdam. Wow!". He said, "Well, it's very good quality. It must be a bit dry already. But... Now they are all yours. A simple gift for you and your mind. Seriously, they are yours now.". She said, "Wow! André... Thank you very much!!! Oh my god...". And she added, "But... I'll save them for tomorrow, because I don't like to smoke weed when I drink alcohol, sorry.". He said, "Olgaaaaaaaaaa... I do the same, I never like to mix weed with alcohol. It's not a good idea. Cheers for that too!!!". And they clinked their bottles once again. Suddenly, she started to stare at him with a different look in her eyes, and this scene reminded him what happened with Polina and with Katerina. But he preferred to avoid such feelings. After all, according to him, this girl was really from an upscale level, she really looked like she liked other type of men, like very tall, handsome and rich guys. He just thought that Olga would remain only as a friend. She then asked him if he had pictures of his past or the books he told her about. He said, "Yes, let me bring my laptop.". He showed her the albums of pictures he had since he was a child. And he also showed her the archives of the books he wrote. She was impressed, and said,



"Wow! André, that's amazing. I'm surprised. You really are into these topics.". He told her that he really didn't consider himself a writer, and that he just wanted to share certain knowledge. She asked him if he wanted to drink another beer with her, and if he wanted go out and eat something or stay home. He said, "Sure, please. Let's drink another one. What would you like do or where would you like to go? I really don't want to interfere with your daily plans.". She said, "If we go out let's go in a cab, because I already drank two beers, and I want to avoid any type of problems. You know what I mean, right?". He said, "OK! I agree with that. But since now you don't have to spend in anything. In fact, I have this for you for now.". He gave her a small envelope with the equivalent of 1,000 dollars in rubles. He added, "So, please... Take this. And thank you very much for picking me up, for offering me to stay in this wonderful place you have, and for inviting me into your life.". She smiled and said, "Ahhh... André!!! Please... OK, OK, OK!!!! Thank you very much!". Before they were about to finish their beer, he asked her, "So, Olga... I see that you really don't need CGN so much in economic terms. But, what really brought you to that website, how come? I mean, please... You are a brilliant, fortunate and extremely beautiful woman, why are you there, even if you really don't use it so much?". She laughed and said, "OK, OK, OK... I'll tell you... Well... For me it's like an adventure, and to be honest I kind of feel excited to see how all these men drool when they see me topless, or sometimes fully naked. It's like a weird joke for me. I feel like I can do with them anything I want to. And I get money for it. Hahahahaha... I really won't stay there for too long. Maybe one more month. Honestly, I know about the issues of all that, and I really don't agree with

that type of business either. I had a friend that was into it for almost 2 years, she really needed it. But I just saw it as a funny experience, that's all. Besides, I really don't like Russian men too much, and I also saw it as a way to meet another type of men. That kind of excites me, like it turns me on...". He asked her, "Have you met any other man through CGN before?". She said, "Nooooooo. You are the first one. And I really thought, after the other men I dealt with in CGN and saw there, that you were very special and different. I was going to already give up, because none of the men I had as "friend" in CGN really grabbed my attention. With you it was different, after I read some things on your profile, and after I saw you, I said to myself, he's the one... Hahahahaha...". He said, "Wow! It's a real honor for me to hear such words, really. I feel like the most fortunate man in the world, only by being here talking with you, sharing this moment. Thank you very much. Cheers!". She again started to look at him in a strange and sexy way. According to him, for some seconds he felt, by the way she was looking at him, that she wanted to jump over him and eat him.

But, he really wanted to avoid that, he really had somebody else on his mind, and he really would've prefer to avoid all this experience in meeting another woman. But... There he was, with Olga in her apartment drinking some beer. She suddenly stood up, took a few steps around a table and said, "I have something to tell you, André... Since some time ago I like to have sex with beautiful women. I don't have sex with men anymore... Hahahaha... Sorry, but I wanted to let you know so there isn't any misunderstanding. OK?". He was shocked but at the same so relieved. He said, "Well... That's great, really! Honestly, I feel better now... Like relaxed... Uffffff... Thank

you for telling this, really! And... Cheers for that too!!! Lucky girls, ahhhh? Hahahahaha...". They clinked their bottles again. And she had this funny smile and look in her eyes. But, anyway... André really felt relief after she told her that.

They called a cab and went out to a restaurant.

She also wanted to take him to a nice plaza near that restaurant, so they went for a walk after having dinner.

They then took a cab and went back home.

It was already midnight. She asked him what would he like to do in the morning, afternoon or evening. He told her that he will decide after breakfast, and that he really wasn't in a hurry to go out. She also told him that she needed to prepare some lessons, so that if he needed something she was going to be in her bedroom working for the next two hours. He said, "OK. Thanks a lot. I'll be in the bedroom doing my stuff on the laptop too."

He answered some messages to Katerina and Svetlana. Everything was OK with the both of them, and wrote him that they missed him a lot.

He also had a Skype call with me, telling me that he arrived okay and other details. He also told me that maybe he wasn't going to stay in Moscow for so long, and that he needed to think and decide when was he going to leave. I offered him to stay for some months at my place in Sao Paulo.

He then went to sleep. He was really tired.

He woke up at 11 am. He went to the kitchen to serve himself something to drink. Olga's cat was in the kitchen, it was female and she immediately felt comfortable with him. Her name was Gigi and followed him to the bedroom. He turned on his laptop, he started to watch some news and write some messages. He smoked a

cigarette, went back to his room. It seemed that Olga was still sleeping, her bedroom door was closed. He made himself a light breakfast, a natural fruit juice, a couple of sandwiches with olives. He then took a shower. He went back to the laptop.

Suddenly, Olga knocked on his door and asked him, "André... Is Gigi with you?". He answered her, "Yes. Please come in. The door is open.". She opened the door and came in, she saw Gigi lying on the center of the bed and said, "Gigi!! Don't be bothering André...". He immediately said, "Please, Olga. It's OK. I like cats. We were playing for a while, I left the door a bit opened while I was taking a shower, in case she wanted to leave. But when I came out of the bathroom she was still there, in that same place.". She laughed and asked him, "Did you have breakfast already? Sorry, I overslept.". He said, "Yes, I did. Thanks. I left some fruit juice in the fridge, in case you want. If you don't want let me know, so I'll drink it later.". She said, "Ohhh... Thanks. Wow! I want to try it.". She went to the kitchen and came back to his room with the glass of juice on her hand. She said, "Wow! It's delicious. Thank you so much.". He said, "You're welcome. I drink it every morning. So, if you want, I can leave a glass for you every morning too. Let me know, please.". She said, "Yes. Thanks. It makes you feel so... Like... Fresh!!!". He said, "Yeah... It cleans you inside, it's really effective.". She said, "You don't drink coffee?". He said, "Yes, I do. I already drank some. I leave it as a sort of dessert after breakfast, really. I add some sugar and some milk to it. It's the way I finish my breakfast.". She smiled and said, "I see you are kind of methodic. The kitchen looks like if nobody used it. It looks exactly the same how I left it last night.". He said, "Well... Olga... For some things I have a philosophy,

don't leave a trace and leave everything the way you found it. Don't let anybody notice that you did or used something. I mean, at least it's my way of thinking when somebody uses the kitchen or bathroom.". And he laughed. She laughed, and said, "Wow! You seem to be the man every woman would like to marry. Anyway... What are you doing now? Am I interrupting you? Are you busy?". He answered her, "No, not at all. I already finished what I needed to do. I was just listening to some music, waiting for you.". She asked him, "What would you like to do today? Where would you like to go?". He replied, "I don't have any idea. Do you want to go out? Would you like to go somewhere? Maybe we can smoke a bit of that weed and go out. Maybe to the city center. You don't have to drive, so we can call a cab. What do you think? Please, tell me.". She said, "Yes. Let's do that. And the institute where I teach is nearby. I want to show you where I work.". He said, "Cool! Sounds great. I'm ready. But please, you take your time. I'm free, you're free, there's no rush.". She said, "Great. I'll go to the kitchen and eat something. Please join me. Yes?". He said, "Sure, let's go.". André suddenly realized and noticed that, by the way she asked him to join her in the kitchen, she kind of felt lonely, that what she really needed and liked was to be with somebody at home. He sat with her at the kitchen table, she started to eat some cereal and drink a cup of coffee. She said, "Thank you for joining me. You know something, I told you that I had a roommate, right? It's not that I miss her. But, I don't know why lately I feel lonely. I mean, I like to be alone, with Gigi too. But, maybe it's because I'm getting old. What do you think?". He said, "Well, it depends. Maybe you really would like to have somebody in your life, to share moments, so you can

remember them with that person later. It really depends on what you really need and what you want at the same time. It also depends on your character, right? And also on how much you can admire and feel devotion to a companion or partner. Because, if you really don't admire him (or her), or if the relationship is only based on a sexual aspect, then it won't really touch you and it won't last for too long. And it's like feeling alone once again, but without wanting it. At the same, the presence of that person will start to bother you. And that's when conflicts between them begin.". Olga replied, "Wow! Hey... You are so deep when you explain something. Hahahahaha...". He said, "Sorry. I'm so sorry. Hahahaha... Maybe it's because I care about you. And maybe because I feel what you feel, and I understand you.". She then stood up and said, "Thank you. I would like to have breakfast with you too, and talk with you every morning. I'm serious. I'll go to the bathroom and take a shower.". He said, "Please, take your time. I'll be in the bedroom.". She gave him a kiss on his cheek and left.

45 minutes later she came out of her room. She looked like a fashion top model. She really didn't use heels, almost all her shoes or boots were flat. She went to André's bedroom and said, "I'm ready.". He looked at her and said, "You look great, radiant and wonderful. You are such a beautiful woman, dear Olga. Sorry for being honest. Pure perfection!". She blushed and said, "Thank you!". She called a cab, and then they went to the balcony to smoke a couple of hits of the joint André had rolled. The cab arrived and they went to the city center. She was obviously "stoned", and she didn't talk too much. As soon as they got off the cab, she said. "I feel very, but very high.". He took a bubblegum from his pocket and said,

"Open your mouth, dear. Pleaseeeeeee...". And he put a stick of a bubblegum in her mouth. He added, "As soon as the taste disappears, throw it away.". She looked at him, like thinking in what he just did, and said, "Hey... Why did you do that?". He answered her, "Because I want you to balance your nervous system, and sugar will keep you balanced and stop you from getting higher, so you will have everything under your control. And because I want you to have a good time and don't feel strange. And... Because I care about you.". She said, "Hey... You know something. You really are sweet and cute. Thanks! I feel better now.". They went for a walk, they went to the Red Square, they walked through many streets and avenues. They went to a bridge over the main river. They later went to a small and cozy restaurant that was almost empty. They had a soft drink and a piece of cake. She then said, "Would like to know where I work?". He said, "Of course, take me there.". They went walking through a plaza, then through a small park, and they finally arrived to a big building that had a language institute on the first and second floor. She saw that one of her co-workers was also arriving to the place. She said high to her and introduced her, "André, she is my co-worker Yulia. Yulia, he's my friend André.". He stretched her hand to her in a very gentle way and said, "Yulia, nice to meet you.". She was also a beautiful young lady, with brown hair and deep blue eyes, her face was perfect. Then the two of them started to talk in Russian. Olga then apologized with him for doing it, and they started to speak in English. It was a funny scene. Then they went inside the institute. According to André, the receptionist or secretary, called Irina, was yet another beauty queen. Olga took him to see the entire institute, they went to the small cafeteria. She

introduced him to her boss, called Nastya, which was a lady like about 55 years old, but also another fashion-type and gorgeous woman, and she said, "Wow! What a handsome young man. Nice to meet you, André.". They all laughed and Olga said, "He's 43 years old", and kept laughing. Nastya opened her big green eyes like she was surprised and said, "Wow! Really? I thought you were 25 years old." And they all laughed. Then they went to a big room, sort of a conference room. There was a guy, she also introduced him, he was called Sergey. He was about 30 years old. Olga told him that André wrote a book about music, and that he was a music collector too. Sergey, who also spoke English, started to talk about music with André. He asked him if he had an account in Facebook. André said, "No, sorry. But I have an account in VK.". Sergey said, "Hey, cool!". He gave Sergey the name of his account, and Sergey said, "I'll send you a friend request, OK?". André said, "Great! I'll add you as soon as I get back home.". Sergey asked him, "Do you live in Moscow?". André explained to him that he just arrived yesterday from Ukraine and that was temporary living in Olga's apartment. Sergey asked him, "That's good. We should meet one day to talk about music.". André said, "That would be awesome. I still don't know for how long I'll stay in Moscow, but at least I'll be here for a month.". Sergey said, "That's awesome. Welcome to Moscow. It was a pleasure to meet you."

Then Olga told him to please wait 10 minutes in the reception area, that she wanted to talk with her boss in her office.

He started to talk with Irina, the receptionist. She also spoke English very well. He noticed something weird about her, like if she had a crush on him. He noticed that



she was a bit nervous. Irina asked him, "In what hotel are you?". He answered, "No, I'm temporary at Olga's place.". She then asked him, "Ohhh... Are you Olga's boyfriend or just her friend.". He said, "I'm just a friend.". She smiled and asked him, "For how long will you stay in Moscow?". He said, "Well, I still don't know exactly, but maybe one or two months, maybe three.". She smiled at him again and asked him, "And... Where are you from?". He said, "I was born in Perú, in South America. But I also was kind of raised in the US, I lived there for several years.". She immediately said, "Oh my god... Really? My parents went to Perú a year ago, they visited Cusco and Macchu Pichu. They liked it a lot.". And she added, "But you really don't look like Peruvian.". He explained to her that his mother and father were from Italian and Spanish families. She said, "I'm studying Spanish. Hola, cómo estás?". They both laughed, and he said, "Estoy muy bien, gracias.". Irina was so surprised by his accent in Spanish and said, "Oh my god. You really speak so good.". He smiled at her. Irina was really a friendly lady too. She then asked him if he had Facebook, and he said that he used VK. She asked him for his account in VK, she took her phone and send him a friend request. Right when Irina was doing that, Olga came back, and noticed what Irina was doing. He noticed that Olga's attitude changed a little bit for a few seconds, and she approached the two of them, and said, "André, let's go?". He said, "OK. Let's go.". He said goodbye to Irina, and he gave her a kiss on her cheek. Irina blushed. And he said, "I'll contact you as soon as I go home, OK?". She said, "Yes. Thank you.". Olga and André left the place. As soon as they were on the main sidewalk he asked Olga, "How was your meeting. Everything OK?". She said, "Yes, I changed a bit

my schedule for this week and for the next one.". He said, "Ahhh... OK. So, where do you want to take me now?". And he laughed looking at her. She smiled, but he noticed that something bothered her. But he acted like if he didn't notice it. She thought what she wanted to say for a few seconds and then said, "Well... I don't know. Do you like lasagna?". He said, "Yeah, of course. As long it doesn't have any animal inside.". She started to laugh hard and said, "It sounds so funny. Yeah. I like to cook lasagna with mushrooms, artichoke and spinach. But I would like to buy a bottle of red wine for the occasion.". He said, "Wow! You want to cook? Sounds great. Let's go buy that wine. Let's take a cab and go home.". She smiled and she kind of hugged André and put her head on his shoulder for a few seconds. He started to think about the look in her eyes when he was with Irina, and now this... Something wasn't really clear for him. But, he just followed "the script". After all, he was living in Olga's place and it was only his second day in Moscow.

They went to a liquor store and bought the wine. Then they took a cab to the apartment. She was kind of silent during the ride. Once they were in the elevator of her building she asked him, "And what were you talking about with Irina?". He said, "Ahhh... Nothing, really. She told me she was studying Spanish, and that her parents visited Perú a year ago. She asked me where was I living. I told her that I was at your place. And that's it.". She replied, "Ahh... OK. Well, now you have two new friends in Moscow. Sergey and Irina.". He said, "Yeah, thanks to you.". She smiled at him while she opened the door of her apartment. She then said, "OK. This is the plan. I'm going to change my clothes, I will start to prepare the ingredients and cook. I would like to smoke a little bit of

that joint too. Can I ask you to join me in the kitchen, or you have something to do?". He said, "No. Sounds great. I'll change my clothes too.". She said, "Good boy.". And she started to laugh. They went to their own bedrooms and changed their clothes for something more comfortable. He went to the kitchen to serve himself a bit of a soft drink. She went to the kitchen when he was still there. André was speechless to see what she was wearing, a very small and white short, a white and almost translucent top, and she wasn't wearing a bra. André barely looked at her when she asked him, "Let's smoke that joint here in the kitchen, OK?". He didn't look at her, he kept staring at the bottle while he was serving himself in a glass, and said, "Do you want some?". She approached him and got very close to him, so close that for a couple of seconds she softly rubbed her breasts on one of his arms. She gave him a glass and said, "Please, but just a bit.". He noticed that she wanted him to look at her, she was with her eyes wide opened and trying to make him look at her eyes, like chasing his eyes. She said, "Thanks.". Then she said, "I hope you don't feel uncomfortable because I'm wearing these light clothes on.". She started to laugh. He said, "No. Please... It's OK. You look amazing, by the way. And I'll try not to look at you.". And he started to laugh hard, and immediately said, "I'm joking. Sorry... I'm just joking.". And he looked at her in the eyes. She had this naughty look in her eyes again. But then she lit up the joint. They both smoked a couple of hits. She then asked him to help her with some things, like to pass her certain knife, or the salt, things like that. She said, "So you can also know where the things are.". She started to laugh. He suggested to her to drink a bit of the soft drink. And she drank another glass. The

lasagna was already done, now it had to be in the oven for several minutes. She said, "Let's go to the living room?". He agreed. They sat down on the couch, but this time she sat next to him, very close to him. And said, "The oven is automatic, so I don't have to worry in turning it off. But in one hour I have to take it out from the oven. Would you like a beer? I'm going to bring my laptop and listen to some music.". He said, "Cool. Great idea. I would go bring the beer.". She said while she was walking to her bedroom, "Good boy.". And started to laugh.

They sat down again on the couch, she put her laptop on the table on the center of the living room. She grabbed her bottle of beer and said, "Cheers!". They both clinked their bottles.

It was already sunset. The view from the window was amazing. It was March and it was quite a sunny day. Cold, but sunny.

She then said, "Only for tonight let's smoke inside. I don't want to put a jacket to smoke in the balcony.". He said, "Sure. You are the boss, you command. I obey". She started to laugh, and said. "That sounds very funny.". She kept laughing. She then asked him, "Do you have any plans for tonight. What are you going to do?". He answered her, "No. I don't. Only spend my time with you as much as I can.". She started to laugh again, this time like uncontrollably, and said, "Good boy.". He also started to laugh.

She then said, "Let's watch some movies after dinner. I know you are a very smart man. I'm curious what type of movies do you like, or what are your favorite ones.". He said, "Well, I'm not too much into watching movies since many years ago. But I do have some favorite ones, of course. Perhaps my top 5 would be, in chronological

order... "2001", "The Last Temptation Of Christ", "The Usual Suspects", "Contact" and "Matrix". Of course I can mention 5 or 10 more. And what movie would you like to watch?". She said, "I haven't seen any of the ones you just mentioned. I would like to watch at least two of them. We will have time to watch a lot of movies together, I guess.". He said, "Well, depending on your mood and what information would you like to download to your brain. Hahahaha... I'll tell you what each of the movies is about, and you'll decide which ones grab your attention. Deal?". So he started to explain briefly what each movie was about. She finally said, "I would like to see the five of them. But tonight I'm curious about "The Usual Suspects" and "Matrix".". He said, "OK. We'll watch the two of them. We'll smoke a little bit, just a little bit, and between the two movies we can eat that chocolate cake we bought the other day.". She said, "Ohhhh yeah... The cake, I even forgot about it. Hahahaha.". He said, "Are we going to watch them here on your laptop or on mine?". She said, "Nooooo. I have a big TV on my bedroom, it's fixed to the wall. Come with me, I'll show you my bedroom.". They both went to her bedroom, he said, "Wow! Nice bedroom, such a big bed. Nice TV too.". She laughed. He said, "OK. I'll bring the chair I have in my bedroom.". She stopped him from leaving and grabbed him by the arm and said, "Hey... Don't be silly... OK? We'll lay or sit together on the bed.". He smiled and laughed, and said, "OK. I obey". She laughed again and it seemed like if she was going to say something else, she even was going to spell the first word, but then she said, "Let's go to the kitchen, the lasagna...".

Some minutes later they had dinner, they drank some red wine. He washed everything, while she was in the kitchen

with him, and while she was watching him she said, "You know, I still can't believe a woman didn't rapture you... Hahahaha... You really are a man that any woman would like to marry. Hahahaha...". He said, "Nah. I'm not that fortunate." She said, "Come on... Don't say that.". He then started to think in Katerina, but he wanted to avoid talking about her while being with Olga, it wasn't appropriate according to him, he didn't want Olga to know about her. He just continued washing. Then he said, "Let me go to the bedroom for a few minutes, let me brush my teeth, and I'll go to your room and we can watch the movies. Would you like some kind of tea or infusion?". She said, "Not now, maybe later. Thanks.". So she went to her bedroom to search for the movies.

While he was in his bedroom he noticed that there were some messages from Katerina and Svetlana, and also messages from me on Skype. He answered the messages, went to brush his teeth and then went to Olga's bedroom. She had the joint on her hands and said, "May I?". He said, "Sure! Please...". And they watched the first movie, which she enjoyed. She then went to the kitchen and brought two pieces of cake to the bedroom. She then asked him, "I don't have your VK, give me the name of your account, please." He gave her the name, which was his name and surname, André Baresi. She said, "Ahhh... OK. Cool, thanks. I'll add you later.".

They watched the second movie, which she also enjoyed. It was already 1 am. And she asked him, "What would like to do later today?". He said, "Well, let me do the same routine in the morning. And then we can decide. OK?". She said, "Fine. Thanks for spending your time with me, I really enjoyed the day with you. You make me feel very happy, André. I like your company a lot.". She gave him a

very suggestive kiss on his cheek, and said "Sweet dreams...". He said, "Thanks to you, Olga. Sleep well. Sweet dreams. See you later. Goodnight!". He went to his bedroom and she stayed in her room.

Thursday morning, he woke up at 9. He did his usual stuff. A couple of hours later she went to his bedroom. He said, "Good morning. There's a glass of juice for you in the fridge.". She said, "Are you busy? Can you join me, please?". He said, "Sure.". And the both went to the kitchen. While she was having breakfast, she asked him, "I like your profile in VK. You like to post a lot of interesting things, and you write your own posts. That's not so common.". He said, "Thanks. Yeah, it became a sort of hobby since 7-8 months ago.". She said, "Were you busy in VK now?". He said, "No. Just answering some messages.". She said, "Did Irina write you?". He said, "Yes, we were chatting a bit, earlier in the morning." She said, "She's a nice girl. Very smart and beautiful.". He said, "Well... Yeah. I don't know her that much. But she seems a nice person.". She said, "Sooooooo... What do you want to do today?" You thought about something?". He said, "No, sorry. Not really. Honestly I'm not a person that likes to go out too much. But if you have any suggestion, please, share it with me.". She started to think, and said, "I want to go to a shopping center which is very cool, you'll like it. I need to search and buy a present, it's Nastya's birthday on Saturday. You remember her, right? My boss.". He said, "Ohhh... Cool. Let's go. I'm ready. When you're ready, let me know.". She said, "Great. Thank you, André.". He said, "Thanks to you.".

After 45 minutes they left the apartment. This time they didn't smoke anything because they went in her car.

They spent like 2-3 hours inside the shopping center, they even had a snack in a café. She bought what she needed to buy, and she also bought some things for her, like clothes, underwear. She was happy.

On their way back they, which was like a 40-minute ride, she asked him, "What would you like to eat later. You want to go out, or maybe you want to cook, or maybe we can finish the lasagna?". He said, "Honestly, I'll go for the lasagna, which I think today will be tastier than yesterday. I really liked it a lot.". She started to laugh and looked at him with a smile like if she was in love... André thought that she really had a sort of conflict inside, that she wanted to let go something. Like if she had a fight inside her. But he just followed "the script" once again. She said, "OK. Let's do the same like yesterday. Deal?". He said, "Absolutely. I enjoyed it a lot.". She said, "But let's avoid the wine tonight, agree?". He said, "Yeah. OK.".

They arrived, they put themselves comfortable. They smoked a little bit of weed. She then went back to her room and came out with a dress she bought, and said, "Does it look good. Do you like it?". He said, "Wow! Olga... It looks fabulous on you.". She said, "I'll wear it for the meeting on Saturday.". She then said, "If you want you can come with me too. Nastya asked me to invite you.". He said, "Hmmmmmm... I don't know, dear. They are really your friends, co-workers. Besides, I really don't have any appropriate clothes for the occasion. We'll think about it tomorrow. But I guess it's better if you go alone. Right?". She said, "Honestly, I'm going because she is my boss. I would prefer to spend my time with you. But, please, think about it. I would really like if you go with me.". She smiled at him, and he said, "Well, if you really want that. I'll go with you. It's not easy to say no to you.". She said,



"Really? Hey, thanks a lot.". She smiled and gave him a kiss on his cheek, and said, "Good boy.". They both started to laugh.

They had dinner again. And then they watched a couple of movies. While they were about to watch the second movie, André started to realize what was really going on with her. How she started to test his manhood, in one sense. How she moved, how she started to seduce him in a very clever way, in a very subtle way. For some moments he used to stare at her body, her feet, her legs. This time she had a small top that didn't cover her belly. This woman had such a perfect body. He kept staring at her arms, her armpits, shoulders, neck, hair, face, the way she moved in the bed while she was lying. Because he was like sitting down, not totally lying in her bed. He also kind of did it on purpose, so she can notice that he really thought she was a goddess.

Anyway, the second movie ended, she started to ask him about some parts of the movie that she really didn't understand. They watched "2001" and "Contact", so he explained some parts of both movies, and what the meaning was. She was surprised, and said, "Well, these movies are definitely to watch them more than once. Right?". He said, "Yeah, no doubt. I watched them many, many times. More than 20 times each of the movies I told you about.". It was already like 2 am, and she said, "Tomorrow I have to go to the institute for a couple of hours, I will also take Gigi to the vet and pick her up when I'm on my way back, OK?". She also said, "I'll leave around noon and come back around 5 or 6 pm. We'll stay in touch by phone if you need something, OK? Ohhhh... And the meeting on Saturday is at a café in the city center, it's at 7 pm. OK?". He said, "Perfect. Thank you.". He also said,

"Sweet dreams, thanks for today. It was another perfect day and evening thanks to you.". She hugged him, and he felt how her breasts were so firm while she pressed them on his chest. He suddenly felt that she did that on purpose. He even started to get hard, but... He was smart enough to not spoil the moment. And if something ended happening between the both of them, he was patient enough. Besides, he really preferred to avoid a situation like that. He was really thinking in Katerina all the time, and thinking on his plans for the near future, in going back to Ukraine, etc.

But, no doubt that Olga was a true goddess of love and a true goddess of sex and sensuality, in a very classy and elegant way. She was a true tempting woman. But he also had in mind what she said about her interest in women more than men.

He went back to his bedroom, he listened to some music, wrote some messages, and went to sleep.

Friday morning, he woke up at 9. He did the usual stuff. When he was about to finish taking a shower, she suddenly knocked on his door. He said, "Just a minute, let me put some clothes on.". She started to laugh and said, "I'll wait for you in the kitchen, OK?". He replied, "OK.". They had a small chat while she had breakfast. Then she went to her room. Minutes later she came out and put Gigi in a special case and left.

Finally, he was home alone. So now he was able to speak freely with Katerina on Skype. He had a few hours of freedom in the apartment. He enjoyed the moment. He spent like two hours with Katerina, he really missed her a lot, and also missed her mother, who wasn't home at the time. Then he had a Skype call with me too. We smoked a joint together, but 15,000 km away. Hahahaha... It was

fun. We started to recall the good old days, back when we were young. And now, this guy was living in an apartment owned by a true goddess. Hahahahaha... We were "stoned" as fuck.

Anyway... He decided to cook something simple, like he used to call "camping food". He boiled some vegetables, he made a very nice salad. Olga arrived when he was in the kitchen. She said, "Hello, my good boy. Mmmmmmm... Smells so good, what did you cook?". He told her that dinner was ready, that it was simple but healthy. She said, "Oh my god. André... Wow!".

She went to her bedroom, she changed her clothes, and then went back to the kitchen. She drank a glass of Coke, and said, "I'll take a shower, OK? Be right back.". He said, "Please, OK!!".

When she was back in the kitchen he asked her, "So? How was your day? Everything OK?". She said, "Yes. Everything like it was planned, everything was fine.". She opened the fridge and grabbed two bottles of beer, he gave one to him, and she added, "And how about you? What did you do? Ohhhhh... By the way, what kind of music are you listening to right now. It sounds so strange, I mean, it sounds very interesting, but like music from a movie.". He smiled at her and said, "Well... This music is by a musician called Klaus Schulze, it belongs to a genre that is known as Cosmic Music, it's a style that took place in Germany for a brief period of time. It's music deeply link to higher levels of consciousness, psychedelic substances, among other topics.". She had her eyes wide opened like if she was amazed and shocked at the same time, and said, "Wow! I didn't know anything about that for sure. But... Hey... OK... I'm not into music the way you are, that's obvious. But, I remember my brother who is a bit older

than me had a collection of CDs, he had bands like Pink Floyd, Black Sabbath, and other weird names. I remember that when he listened to his CDs there was some really strange sounds. I liked some of the things he listened to. But, I'm not a collector. I like some music like, Downtempo, Ambient Jazz, Lounge Music, Trip Hop. But, OK... Please, share some knowledge with me concerning music, tell me what is your book about, please.". He then proceeded to explain almost everything that he wrote on the music guide, step by step, but briefly. He didn't want to bore her at all. So, in 10-15 minutes he kind of synthesized all that information. She was shocked, like if she was attending a Nuclear Physics lesson.

She said, "Wow! Very interesting, no doubt. I see you really are an expert on that topic. When will you publish that book? I would like to read a copy for sure. Cheers!".

They clinked their bottles and went to the living room.

She asked him, "Would you like to smoke some before dinner?". He said, "Sure.". They smoked a bit, just a couple of hits, like usual. He then told her, "Well, I really don't know when I'll be able to publish that book or the other ones. I'm thinking in having the four of them ready and publish them all together at the same time.

Maybe in 1 or 2 years, maybe less. I can't really tell. I would also like to translate some of them to Russian."

She said, "Yes! I think that's a great idea. I can help you with that.". He said, "Great! Thanks in advance."

While they were having dinner, he asked if she would like to watch a comedy movie instead of the movies he already suggested. She agreed.

After he washed the dishes and cleaned the kitchen.

They went to her bedroom and watched "Anger Management", which was one of the very few comedy

movies he liked. He really wasn't too much into that type of movies. She laughed so much while they were watching it. She really had fun.

He then said goodnight, and went to his room.

Saturday morning, he woke up before she did. After he took a shower he started to listen to some music on his laptop. A few minutes later, he heard she was calling him. She wanted him to join her in the kitchen while she had breakfast.

She started to ask him about the other things he wrote, and what exactly were the books about. He explained to her everything. She was impressed again. After she heard about all the information and knowledge that he had, she started to seriously realize who André really was, and with what type of man she was really sharing her time and living with.

In the end, he told her to simply take it all as a witness, to not identify with what he told her. But even if she really didn't fully understand or be aware of what he told her, she seemed excited to always listen to him.

It was already 4 pm, and he asked her if she knew what does Nastya like to drink at home. He wanted to buy something for her as a present, something cool, not ordinary. She suggested a bottle of an exclusive German wine that Nastya always talked about.

Once they left the apartment, they stopped at a very cool liquor shop and bought the wine and put it inside a nice bag.

When they arrived at the café, which happened to be a very exclusive and high-class place, there were already around 10 people in a big table. He gave Nastya her present, she opened it and said, "Wow! André. Thank you

very much. It wasn't necessary... Thank you." She laughed and hugged him.

Irina was also in the meeting. She was sitting right in front of him. He noticed that she didn't stop looking at him, and always asked him things. She asked him if he wanted to go outside for a smoke. Olga was kind of busy chatting and laughing with the other people there, she didn't notice that the both left the table.

There was a small green area with benches right in front of the café. Irina and André sat down in one of them and started to smoke and talk for a while.

Irina was a gorgeous girl, very attractive. They started to speak in Spanish too. She was laughing and smiling all the time. She then asked him if he wanted to go out one day for a walk, or to drink something. She told him that she lived only some blocks away from Olga's place. She also lived alone, her parents lived in another city. He said that he would really like to go out with her. She said she was going to have a couple of weeks off since Monday, and that she was going to call him to coordinate when they can go out. He agreed.

It was still like 9 pm. Irina asked him to go back inside in a while, and that she was enjoying being outside with him. She lit another cigarette.

Suddenly, Olga came out and stood in the front entrance of the place staring at Irina and André. She walked towards them and asked him if he had a cigarette. The three of them started to smoke together. He noticed that she was a bit funny, she was drinking more than what she usually does, and she had to drive back home.

The three of them went inside, and after a while Olga asked him if he wanted to stay or go back home with her. It was kind of strange the tone and the way she asked

him. He said that he would go home with her. She said, "OK. Let's go now."

They said goodbye to everyone, and Olga noticed the way Irina looked at him while she kissed André on the cheek.

Olga and André then went towards the car, and he asked her, "Are you sure it's OK for you to drive?". She said, "Well. I guess. Why do ask? You want to be a good boy and drive me home? Ahhhhh?". She suddenly handed him the keys of the car, "Pleaseeeeeee, young boy... Take me home... Hahahahaha."

He drove back home, and while they were on their way home, she asked him, "So... What did Irina talk with you? Did she ask you for some private Spanish lessons? Ahh? Hahahahaha.". He laughed and said, "Noooo... We were just smoking and talking about the meeting and her job. Nothing else, really. She told me she lived nearby. I didn't know that.". She suddenly started to laugh, and said, "Ahhhh... Fuck!!! So it's true... It's true! This bitch wants to fuck with you. Don't tell me that you didn't notice it because you won't fool me. Hahahahaha...". He started to laugh and said, "I don't think so, to be honest. And if she wants to do that, well... I'll think about it. Don't worry I won't fuck her in your apartment. Hahahahaha...". She started to laugh hard and said, "Yeah, she's beautiful. She's a nice girl... Fucking bitch, ah? Hahahahaha...". He said, "Come on, why do you call her a bitch. It's not fair, she always talks about you in good terms. She doesn't behave like a bitch at all.". She said, "Ahhhh... Whatever... Fuck! Sorry, I'm being a bitch now. I apologize. OK?". They both started to laugh. She then asked him, "Do you like her?". He answered her, "Well, she's a nice person, she's...". And suddenly Olga interrupted him and said,

"Come on, André. You know what I mean with my question. Would you like to have sex with her, yes or no?". She started to laugh hard again, and he said, "Well, if you put it that way... I don't know. I don't think that will happen.". She said, "I think it will. Yes! I think you will end up having sex with her. Hahahaha... Unless... Agghhhhh... Fuck! Whatever... Hahahahaha. It's really none of my business. Sorry."

They arrived to the parking lot in front of the building. They went up to the apartment.

It was 11 pm, still kind of early for both of them.

She asked him, "What are you going to do now? What would you like to do? Do you have any plans?". He said, "No, not really. Maybe just take a shower. And you?". She said, "Take a shower, and... Maybe, I was thinking in going online in CGN. After what happened tonight I think it would be funny.". He said, "Ahhhhh... Hahahaha... OK, sure. Then I'll stay in the bedroom to not bother you.". She said, "Nooooooo... Well, it would be funny if you also go online while you are in the bedroom and we can pretend you are far away. Hahahaha...". He also laughed and said, "Wow! That's a very funny idea... Hahahahaha...". She said, "I'll be online in one hour.". He said, "OK. But in what part of the apartment are you going to be online, in your bedroom?". She said, "No. I'll be in the living room.". He said, "Ahhh... OK. Then I'll take something to drink to the bedroom, so I don't need to go out and bother you or distract you.". She said, "Noooo, please... Don't be silly, André. You won't bother me nor distract me at all. You do what you need to do, if you need to go to the kitchen or the balcony it will be OK. Imagine that I'm just using the laptop, OK?".

Each of them then went to take shower.



Then he logged in, Olga was already in Public Chat. She was wearing the translucent white top and only wearing panties, no shorts. She immediately sent him a PM saying "Hello, how are you? Hahahaha...". And she asked him to turn on his webcam. They were seeing each other and laughing. He thought this was kind of weird, like a sort of fetishism for her.

Suddenly, she got a good tip from a member, she was going to take her top off and remain topless. Fuck!

André felt kind of nervous, and also a bit uncomfortable. Even if she was a goddess, whatever... But he was there in her place, so this wasn't really so cool after all, it might have certain consequences he really wanted to avoid.

She noticed that he kind of avoid watching her.

He was going to write her a message, saying that he was going to log off. But she wrote first, and said "Are you watching me? Hahahaha...". He replied, "Well, I mean... You really are like a friend for me, I'm in your place, and I respect you a lot. I know you are a very beautiful and attractive woman, but I don't know if it's really a good idea to be watching you naked.". She started to laugh, while she stretched her arms and stroked her breasts, teasing the guys in her virtual room, as they kept tipping. And she wrote to him, "Maybe I really want you to see me topless. Hahahahaha... Can I ask you something?". He said, "Yeah, sure. Tell me...". She replied, "What do you feel when you see me topless? Hahahahaha... I'm not watching anybody else, even if they have their cams on, and a couple of members think I'm watching them because they tipped me to do that. But, would you feel bad if I ask you to keep watching me, please? Maybe they'll tip to take my panties off too. Hahahahaha...". He said, "Hahahaha... OK, dear. Anyway... OK. I will watch

you.". She said, "Hey, but you didn't answer me the first question. What do you feel when you are watching me? Please tell me.". He replied, "Well, if you want me to be very honest, and if I imagine that I really don't know you for "real". I would start stroking my cock, because it's almost inevitable to do that. Otherwise, I'll end up having "blue balls". Hahahaha...". She said, "Are you serious? You're not joking?". He said, "Well... No, I'm not joking.". She replied, "Oh my god! I would like to see that. Would you get naked for me? Pleaseeeeeee? Or I'm asking too much?". He replied, "I really never did that before. But if that's what you want, I'll do it.". She wrote, "Yes, I would like to see you naked. Please take off your t-shirt.". So he took off his t-shirt, and she wrote, "Wow! Hahahaha... Can you take off your shorts too? Pleaseeeee?". He noticed that she was blushing, and that she had the same naughty look in her eyes like when they were drinking beer a few days ago. But he also remembered what she told him, that she's a sort of lesbian or bisexual girl. He stood up and took his shorts off, he was already hard. She wrote, "Wow! André... What a nice cock... Hahahahaha...".

All this was getting very weird for him. He also noticed that Olga was kind of a very dominant, manipulative, and fetishist type of woman. But she really covered all that very well. He thought that she really was kind of a potential female pervert deep inside.

She suddenly wrote, "Can you come to the living room, please? Without clothes.". He laughed and wrote, "Hahahahaha... That's what you would like now? Are you serious". She said, "Yes! Please. But you will stand behind the table, OK? Please come to the living room, now!!". He went outside the bedroom and saw her on the couch in

the living room, and she did a sign with her hand like telling him to get closer to where she was.

She suddenly said, "Be right back guys, 5 minutes. OK?" And she turned off her camera.

André had a lump on his throat, he was speechless, while he was staring at her.

She started to walk towards him, she got closer to him and said, "Wow! André. You really make me feel wet and I feel tickles in my pussy when I see you...". He said, "Hey... But didn't you tell me that you were into sex with girls?". She said, "Sorry, Hahahahaha... I was joking. I only wanted to see how you reacted. Come on, don't tell me that you didn't know that I wanted to eat you since the day I first saw you". She suddenly grabbed André's cock, and started to take him to her bedroom. While they were going towards the bedroom she said, "OK, young boy... It's your lucky night. The gates of heaven are opened for you...". Once in her bedroom and while they were standing next to the bed, she suddenly got down on her knees and started to suck his cock for several minutes, and said, "What do you feel? You like it?". He said, "I feel like I'm in heaven, Olga.". She said, while she looked at him straight to his eyes, and while she was still on her knees, "Not yet, not yet... You will... But not yet...". She kept sucking his cock. Then she said, "OK. Heaven is waiting for you. You want to taste me? I want you to be there now... Would you like to lick my pussy?". She took off her panties and sat on the bed spreading her legs wide open. He was more than stunned, his heart was going 300 km/h. He said to her, "It will be a real pleasure, Olga...". And for the lapse of 30 minutes or even more, he started to lick her pussy like a cat would lick an ocean of sweet milk. She had multiple orgasms, while she wiggled over

the white sheets of her bed. She was glowing. She then said, "Put that thing inside me, now. Please... I'm going crazy... I want to feel you inside me.". And for the lapse of 20-30 minutes, he started to fuck the most beautiful sex-goddess that lived on the surface of the entire planet. And in all the positions allowed by gravity and nature. Hahahahaha... The amount of semen that he ejaculated stunned her. He ejaculated on her breasts and she then kept sucking his cock. She said, "You're tasty and sweet as honey... You're my man, André. You want me to be your girl?". He said, "Yes, Olga. And I'm all yours too.". She asked him to take a shower with her. And she also asked him to sleep with her that night. She also told him, that from now on the other bedroom was only going to be his office. She finally said, while he was hugging him over the bed, "Now Irina will have to forget about you. Right? Hahahahahaha... Now, you are only mine...". They both started to laugh.

André was shocked. He really thought all this was just because she felt jealous about Irina. But... He still couldn't believe that all this happened that night. It really took him by surprised. From one moment to another everything took a whole new direction for him. He felt like the most fortunate man on Earth by having sex with this complete and perfect beautiful woman. He couldn't believe it. He had sex with Olga from CGN. He tasted and enjoyed that silky pink-white-pale perfect skin, and that pink-glowing and delicately designed divine pussy.

"My god! What a goddess...", he thought.

This was far too much for him that night.

How many men, how many members, how many perverts in CGN only dreamt of this? And it was all real for André. Aleluya! Amen!

It was Sunday morning. André was feeling all her warm body next to his. She didn't stop hugging him all night. Very carefully he got out of the bed, but she suddenly said with her eyes closed, "Where are you going?". He answered, "I'll go do some stuff, and then make breakfast. Please keep sleeping, OK? I'll come back in a while.". She said, "OK. I'll wait for you here. Don't take too long, please.".

He went to his room, then to the kitchen. He left breakfast served on the table for her.

Then he took a shower.

He went to Olga's bedroom. She was still sleeping. He got into the bed, she didn't notice that he was back. But she suddenly turned over and hugged him.

She then woke up and went to the bathroom, and said to him, "Don't move, please.". He said, "OK.".

She came back, she kissed him on his lips and said, "Lick my pussy like you did earlier today, please?". And he spread her legs over the bed and started licking her pussy for several minutes. She started to pull the sheets with her hands, she began to wiggle her body and curl her toes while she pulled his hair. Her moans were amazing, soft and delicate moans. She was glowing again. She then closed her legs and turned around, she was in doggy style. He started to penetrate her pussy, he was so hard. She barely could speak, and said, "Your cock clicks my button so easy... Mmmmmm... Mmmmm... Mmmmmmm...". She pulled the sheets sticking her nails on the bed. She turned around, she wanted to see him over her, grabbing his arms, staring at him with her big blue-gray eyes, staring deep into his eyes, and waiting for him to cum on her breasts. Once again, she said, "Oh my god... I would really like if you fill me up next time. I'm

serious. I never saw any man ejaculate so much like you do... Wow! Good boy...". They both started to laugh.

Uffffffffffff... Man... Man... Man!!!!

Like he told me, "Bro, if you had the chance to taste her, or taste a woman like her... Man... You would really understand what I felt. You can go crazy for real with a woman like her. She's so addictive. She's like a drug."

They remained on the bed for a while. She didn't stop kissing him, on his cheeks, his chin, his arms, his hands, she hugged him so tight, pressing her amazing breasts to his chest, it was like pure and cosmic warm electricity what he felt on his body.

They took a shower and then they went to have breakfast together.

She asked him if he wanted to go out, because for her it was a special day in her life.

They went out in the afternoon for a ride, they didn't smoke, they didn't drink anything. It wasn't necessary, according to him. They had dinner in a Chinese restaurant.

She told him that she was going to delete her account in CGN as soon as they got back home. She really didn't want that in her life anymore, it was enough for her.

They spent all the night together, watching movies and talking about everything.

They also talked about his plans, she asked him what was he going to do. She also asked him if he wanted to stay in Russia and become a citizen, that she wanted him in her life and didn't want him to go. She told him that if she needed to marry him so he can stay there she would do it, "I want you in my life, I would like to start a family with you.", she said.

But, that wasn't really what he was thinking about, at least not with her.

He told me, that even if she was stunningly beautiful, every man's dream, he really didn't see her for that. This was more like a true and wonderful sexual experience for him, but only that.

He told me that if he wanted to start a family with a woman, it had to be with Katerina, not with Olga. According to him, Olga was too sophisticated and too dominant. She always liked to have everything under her control, she was good at it, very subtle and very, very clever. She was too manipulative. And that meant something, something that we wanted to find out. He had certain feeling about her, like if there was something else...

He now had to think how will he get rid of all this, without hurting her feelings. He would have to be very clever and smart, and very classy in order to leave her, and leave Moscow. Because he really wasn't looking to have that lifestyle, even if it was an upscale lifestyle with all the comforts, he really didn't want that. And he would have to solve all this pretty soon, before things got out of his control. After all, like he also told me, he was living the life of "Luigi". According to him, Luigi was the name of the main character on the book he started to write about all this virtual experience.

Monday morning, while she was taking a shower, and while André was on his laptop, he received a phone call, it was Irina.

He really wanted to meet this young beautiful lady, she didn't have anything to do with the virtual world, he met her by chance, thanks to Olga. He liked that, with Irina he didn't want to be "Luigi", he wanted to be himself, and he

thought that with Irina he was going to be able to talk about everything. He noticed that Irina was far less sophisticated or snobbish than Olga. Irina was modest, very kind and sincere. He noticed that by the way she talked, by the way she expressed herself and by her gestures. She was also into art and music in a very passionate way. She told him that she liked to paint and draw, and write poems. And she was also a very, but very beautiful young woman. She had a picture of herself in VK as her avatar that was taken a year ago, when it was the only time she accepted to pose as a model for an ad in a local magazine. She told him that she got hundreds of phone calls and e-mails, asking if she wanted to become a professional photo-model, she even got several mails that these people told her how much money they were offering her. And she refused all that, it wasn't what she really wanted for her life. Like she told him when they were talking that night outside the café, even many rich men from Russia and some European countries invited her to go out, some of them even talked about marriage, and she rejected all that. It wasn't what she was looking for in her life. She even had to change her e-mail and phone number in order to avoid all that. André liked that, he thought she was very smart and determined with her ideas. Besides, she spoke four languages, she spoke her native Russian, she spoke Ukrainian, because her grandparents were from that country, and she also lived several years in Odessa. She also spoke English very good, and she was on her way with Spanish. She told him that her dream was to meet somebody that spoke Spanish.

So... Back to the phone call... She asked him if he wanted to visit her one day, that she was really interested in



spending some time with him. He got surprised by the way she told him all that by phone.

Of course, now he had to think how was he going to meet her, with Olga always after him. He told her that he was going to coordinate some things that day, and that he would call her later that same day, or send her a message on her phone. She agreed, and told him, "Thanks a lot. I'll expect your call. OK? I'll have the phone with me until you call, OK? Please, don't forget to call me.". He said, "No, Irina. I will call you. I promise you that I'll call you later. You have my word.". They ended the call right when Olga was coming out of her bedroom.

Olga asked him, "What would you like to do today? Any suggestions?". He said, "No, not really. I didn't think in anything. I was supposed to have a Skype call with my friend from Brazil, but around 5 or 6 pm.". She said, "Ahhh... That's great. Because I needed to visit a friend that just gave birth a few days ago. I don't know if you would like to do that.". He said, "I think I will pass this time. Hahahaha...". She said, "OK, I understand you very well. I'll call her right now saying that I will go to her house at 4 pm.". He said, "Cool.". He heard she was talking with somebody on the phone, while she was in the balcony. She came back in and said to him, "Done, I'll visit her at 4 pm. She lives a bit far, so I'll have to leave at 3 pm. I'll be back like at 8 or 9 pm. Is it OK with you?". He said, "Absolutely, please... You don't even need to ask me.". And he immediately said, "You don't mind if I go out to the supermarket after I talk with my friend, right? I'll be back before you come back.". She asked him, "What do you need to buy?". He replied, "Some things, and I also wanted to search for a couple of fruits and vegetables, some bread.". She said, "Ahhh... OK. Cool. We can go now

if you want?". He said, "Nahhh... I don't want to go out right now, to be honest. I was even thinking in smoking a bit with you now, because I also wanted to do something on the laptop. But, I think it's not a good idea anymore because you're going to drive.". She said, "Yeah. We can smoke later. Right?". He said, "OK. I won't smoke now. Are you going to eat something, a snack maybe, before you leave?". She said, "Nooooo. The most probable thing is that I would have a snack at my friend's house, but only a snack. I want to cook something later, if you don't mind.". He said, "Great. Do you need something from the supermarket? Let me know, OK? I'll send you a message when I'm there in case you need something.". She hugged him and said, "You are like me... Everything has to be under control, and you are so kind...". They both laughed... She said, "OK, and what are you going to do on your laptop, can I pull a chair and join you?". He said, "No... I'll take my laptop to the living room, so we can sit on the couch.". They both sat on the couch, listening to music, he showed her some archives and images that he had for his books. He noticed that she was only being polite, and that she really was getting a bit bored while he was showing her all his stuff. She really wasn't into what he was. They really weren't in the same wavelength. He started to seriously think and realize that he wasn't going to stay there for too long.

It was already 2 pm, she said she was going to her bedroom to change her clothes and get ready.

She left at 3 pm. He immediately called Irina. She answered and said, "Hey... Wow! Thanks for calling, I'm so happy that you called.". He said, "I keep my promises, dear Irina. Are you busy now?". She answered, "No. I'm free.". He said, "You told me that you live nearby, right? I

guess you know the supermarket that is next to a small park, right?". She said, "Yes, of course.". He said, "Can you go there now? How long will it take you to go there?". She said, "If I go walking 15-20 minutes, and if I go in my car 5 minutes.". He said, "Can I meet you there in 15-20 minutes?". She said, "Of course. I'll be in the main entrance of the supermarket.". He said, "Perfect. See you there.". They ended the call. He put some clothes on and left.

He arrived in 15 minutes. She was already there with a can of Coke on her hand and smoking a cigarette. He said, "Irina, thanks for coming. I'm happy to see you. Listen, I need to buy some stuff and take it to Olga's place. I'll leave the things in her apartment and then we can go for a walk if you want." She said, "Yes, of course. I came in my car, so I can take you there. But I don't know exactly where it is.". He said, "Cool, great... If you want I'll go inside and buy the things quickly, or you also need to buy something?". She said, "Yeah, maybe I'll buy some stuff too, let's go together.". He said, "Great. Thanks!". They went inside, he grabbed a small basket and she did the same.

While they were picking up their stuff they started to talk, she asked him, "How is Olga? She seemed a bit weird that night in the café. You know, we know each other only for some months, I work in the institute since 3-4 months, I talked with her a few times, but that's all. She really never said more than a few sentences when I spoke with her.". He laughed and said, "I thought you knew her more than that. Yeah, she was a bit strange that night. I'll tell you all the details of what happened as soon as leave all this stuff.". She said, "Wow! I'm curious now. What happened? Is she at home now?". He said, "No, she went to visit a

friend of hers, kind of far away. She'll come back at 8 or maybe 9 pm. I'll have to come back to the supermarket, because I told her I was really coming at 6 or 7 pm, and I told her I was going to write her a message once I was here.". She said, "That sounds weird. I know it's none of my business, but you seem a bit tense... Hahaha.". He said, "I'll tell you, dear. Let me get rid of these things and we will talk.".

They paid and left the supermarket. She remained in the car in the parking lot in front of Olga's building. He took only 10 minutes and was already back in the car with Irina. He said, "OK, done... Where would you like to go? Is there any café nearby or a park with benches where we can talk?". She said, "Yes, of course. But if you want we can go to my place, it's closer than any café or park, to be honest. And like you told me you have to come back to the supermarket I think it's better.". He said, "Great! Perfect... Let's go to your place then.".

They arrived at Irina's apartment, it was smaller than Olga's, but it was very cozy and cool. He said, "Wow! Such a cool place. It's beautiful.". It had two balconies, two bedrooms, a big kitchen. She was kind of minimalistic, she really didn't have too many things. She had a big table where she had some drawings. He was amazed, she was really good in drawing landscapes and abstract paintings too. She invited him to sit down in a nice couch she had in one of the balconies. She offered him something to drink, they smoked some cigarettes and he started to talk with her. He said, "Well... Finally, I can tell you everything... I already told you that I was in Ukraine because I went to meet some people that I met only in a virtual website, right? I was supposed to leave Ukraine and go back to Brazil for some months, but 3-4 days

before I had to leave Ukraine I met Olga on the Internet. We shared our Skype, we had a video call, I told her where I was and what I was going to do, and I was very surprised when she said that if I decided to visit Moscow she would be glad to meet me there. So, I decided to come to Moscow, she picked me up at the train station, she offered me to stay at her place too. I really only saw Olga as a kind of friend, really. And during those first days of my stay, even when you and I met at the institute, it was like that. But, since that night at the café, after we arrived home, she was a bit drunk, right? I even had to drive her car, just in case. Please, Irina, what I'll tell you now is only for your ears. I trust in you, so please be discreet with all this, OK?". Irina started to laugh and looked at him with her big blue-turquoise eyes, like if she was excited to listen to what he was about to say. He continued, "That night, and after she took a shower, and after an hour or so she wasn't that kind of drunk anymore. But she started to flirt with me, she asked me what was I talking with you, I told her what we talked about, and I noticed that she got jealous or something like that. After a few minutes, we were sitting on the couch, and she was wearing a very suggestive translucent top and she was only wearing panties, something that until that night she didn't do before. The thing is that she started to talk about sex. And to be honest, before that night, I even thought that she was maybe a bisexual or lesbian, OK? But then she started to touch my... You know... Right? She asked me to take my shorts off and we ended having sex. And since that night, well... What can I say? The relationship between us kind of took a direction I really didn't want.". Irina interrupted him and asked, "Do you love her?". He said, "Depending on the concept or definition of what is love.

Maybe yes. But as a woman, as a couple, or future wife, no. I don't want, and honestly I don't like a woman like her. You know, kind of sophisticated, upscale girl, kind of manipulative, that wants everything to be like she wants, under her control, whimsy, etc. I guess you know what I mean, right?". She started to laugh and said, "Oh my god... Hahahaha... Yeah, I know what you mean. Listen, let me tell you something. In the institute we all know that she is a good English teacher, she has a higher degree in that, we know she really is also kind of "discreet" with her personal life. There was another English teacher some months ago, her name was Lera, she was also in the same degree or level as Olga, and she was also very attractive, a very fashion-type of girl, you know what I mean, right? Did she tell you about Lera? She went to Italy.". He said, "Ohhh... She told me that she had a roommate that was living with her and left some months ago to Italy.". She started to laugh and said, "Roommate? Hahahaha... Let me tell you that story, which I even saw with my own eyes, OK? Lera was kind of strange, in the sense that she really didn't like to share anything about her with us at the institute. But we all noticed that she got along very well with Olga. One night, Olga was supposed to have a lesson, but the student called to the phone I have in charge, as a receptionist, OK? Olga had some lessons before during that night, then I saw her with Lera in the cafeteria. Lera was free that night, but she was in the institute, which I thought it was kind of strange. I then went to the cafeteria and it was empty, so I went to the classroom where Olga was supposed to have her lesson, I noticed that her things were over the desk, but the classroom was empty. The lights are always on in every classroom even if there won't be any lesson, OK? So, I

went to check to another classroom searching for Olga. Nothing! I started to worry a bit. I said to myself she was with Lera, they didn't go out, I would've seen that. Then I went to the sort of conference or meeting room, OK? I opened the door very slowly, because I kind of heard that there was somebody inside, like I heard some noise and voices, but not necessarily voices like when somebody speaks or talks. OK? I opened the door, and I saw Lera with her blouse opened, no bra, she was kind of topless, and Olga was kissing her breasts, while Lera was touching her... You know... Touching her pussy. OK? They didn't see me, because they were on the far side of the table, I saw them and I was shocked. And I heard that Olga said to Lera, that she loved her and told her to wait until she finished her lesson so they can go to her place. I then silently closed the door, and went straight to the reception area. I was still shocked, I couldn't believe what I saw, really. I decided to call Olga to her phone, she answered and I said, Olga I was looking for you but I didn't know where you are. Where are you? The student called and said that he wasn't able to attend the lesson tonight. She said, like... Ohhhh sorry, I was in the bathroom. Lera doesn't feel good. I will go to reception right now... And she ended the call. A few minutes later, but I mean, like 10-15 minutes later. She and Lera appeared on reception and only said that they were leaving. And they left. Now... Wait a minute... After a few weeks, we had a student here, he was studying English. He became a good friend of Sergey, you know him, right? This student told Sergey that he can swear that Olga and Lera were cam-girls and that they were lesbians and did virtual shows on a well-known website. He said that they both had an account there and that they used to

masturbate together, and that he noticed that it wasn't only a show, it was like serious stuff, you know what I mean, right? That student invited Sergey one night to his place, and Sergey told me that she saw them on a website called CGN, and that they were really well paid cam-girls, and that they said they were from...". André interrupted her and said, "Belarus...". Irina looked at him with her big eyes wide opened and said, "Oh my god... You knew about this?". He said, "No, but I met Olga in that website, I wanted to avoid telling you that detail, but that's the website where I met her. Yes, she is a cam-girl, and what you are telling me makes sense. On her profile in that website, there is a space on the profile's wall where other members or models can leave comments, and I remember reading one comment from another model of CGN saying, "I love you forever, my sweet kitty... Thanks for the orgasms, you have magic fingers...". I checked that model's profile, there were pictures of her, and there was also a comment from Olga, of course, not as Olga but using her nickname on that website, it read, "I'll always love you, my tigress..."

He then immediately asked Irina, "Do you have any picture of Lera?". She said, "Yes, from a meeting in the institute like 2 months ago. Let me bring my laptop...". André was really shocked, in one sense.

This was his way out from Olga's place for sure, he really didn't like all this.

Irina came back with her laptop and showed him some pictures of that meeting in the institute, she said, "This is Lera.". He said, "Yes! That's the other cam-girl. I'm a 100% sure. No doubt! Anyway... Irina, let me tell you something, please. Now that you are aware of all this shit. Olga told me since the first night I was at her place that she was a



dike, that she was into sex with girls, OK? But the night she had sex with me, before we had sex, I asked her that I was surprised that she wanted to fuck with me, because she told me that, and she said that she was joking, that it was only to protect herself from me, or to test me... Hahahaha... Anyway, Irina... I need to add something. Like I said, even if you knew about this, let's keep it between you and me, OK? She told me that I was the man she was looking for all her life, that I really made her feel like a woman. She told me she was going to delete her account in CGN. Today I noticed that she did that, she doesn't have an account there anymore, and trust me I even checked that maybe she was lying and only blocked Russia from having access to her profile, but I used a VPN, and according to the VPN I was in the Netherlands. Her profile was deleted. What do I want to say with all this? Olga isn't really a bad person, OK? Yeah she seems snobbish, and maybe all this bisexual or lesbian experience was just a period for her. Maybe she really was confused or something. I know she really needs a lot of affection and she's really after that. She really is, seriously. So, I really don't think all this is dangerous or serious stuff, OK? I really don't care about that anymore. What I do care is that I really don't want to be there anymore. I'm going to make a plan, a good one, because I really don't want to hurt her feelings. After all, she has been more than a good person with me, more than friendly, but that's it for me. Yes, she is a very sexy and attractive woman, no doubt. I can tell, I already tasted her upside-down and inside-out... Sorry for being too honest. But I'm not a teenager, right? And that night at the café, she was jealous of you, she told me that. And you know what she told me after we had sex that same night? She said, "Now

you are mine, and Irina will have to forget about you.”. Crazy, ah? That told me a lot about her, but like I repeat it’s not bad, it’s simply that she likes to manipulate and have control of everything or everyone around her. So? I have to think when and how I’ll leave her place. But with elegance, without hurting her feelings, she doesn’t deserve that, at least not from me.”.

Irina looked at him, like thinking... She then said, “Well, let me know if I can be useful for you. We are very close, and you can count on me if you want to share when and how will you leave. By the way, until when did you plan to stay in Moscow? Do you have a ticket?”. He said, ‘No, I didn’t plan the date for leaving Moscow, I don’t have any ticket, not yet.”. She asked him, “Will you leave soon, I guess now that all this happened, and now that you know more about Olga, maybe you want to leave sooner than what you thought?”. He said, ‘I still have to think on all this... I don’t have answers right now. I’ll have a Skype call with my friend from Brazil. I’ll share all this with him, so we can think about any possible schedule of leaving. Besides, even if I want to leave Olga’s place, that really doesn’t mean I want to leave Moscow. I’ll search for a hotel. I really would like to stay for some time. But with Olga, she might end up spoiling my fun or my plans, you know what I mean, right?”. She said, “Yeah, sure... I understand.”.

André stood up, lit a cigarette, and noticed that it was better to start walking towards the supermarket and write Olga a message asking if she needed something from there.

He said to Irina, “Thank you very much for everything. Really!!! I would’ve like to talk about many other things with you, not about Olga, to be honest. I’m really curious

about your paintings and about the story you might have, your past, etc. You know what I mean, right? I hope you have time another day. Trust me, I'll manage the way to visit you. If it's possible."

Irina stared at him deeply into his eyes and said, "Yes, please... I really would like to see you again. You won't disappear, right? You won't leave tomorrow or this weekend, right? Please, don't do that... Would you like if I walk with you to the supermarket?". He said, "Yes, please. That'll be great. Thanks a lot."

She smiled with a very tender and sweet look in her eyes, and said, "Nooo... Thanks to you, it's a real pleasure for me to meet you, André."

The both of them went towards the supermarket.

He sent Olga a message to her phone. She called him back and said, "Hello, dear. Where are you?". He said, "Hello. I'm walking towards the supermarket. Do you need anything? How is your meeting? Everything OK?". She said, "Yes, everything is OK. I might be leaving in an hour so I'll be home in two hours, OK? Can you buy some mushrooms and a bottle of red wine, please?". He said, "Yeah, of course. Any brand?". She said, "You choose, I really don't care what brand, to be honest. As long as it's red wine.". He said, "OK, dear. I'm already in the supermarket. I'll wait for you, take care, OK?". He ended the call.

During all the conversation, Irina didn't stop smiling and staring at him.

They were still like 3 blocks away from the supermarket. She said after he finished talking with Olga, "Wow! You really know how to manage everything, the tone of your voice was awesome and so convincing."

He laughed and said, "Well, sometimes we have to do what we need to do. I really hate lies, Irina. But minds like mine, know when and how to use lies as a tool, always thinking on not to hurt or spoil other people's time or life, but for their own good." She said, "Wow! You are always so deep with your answers. So accurate, so precise. I never heard anybody tell things or do things the way you do. I thought men like you only lived in the heights or far away from common people and from these type of societies."

He said, "They do, Irina. They prefer to avoid all this... Let's say... This illusion. To call it in a nice way. Some, like me, maybe decided to descend for a while, and witness some things, and help some people as much as we can."

She said, "You know, I hope you don't misunderstand me or... Whatever... Sorry, I'll tell you next time we see each other." He immediately stopped walking and looked at her straight into her eyes and said, "Irina, maybe it's better if you say it now. Tell me, what did you want to say, share it with me...". She then said, "Since the first moment I saw you, I knew you were different. I felt like if you are from the same world I'm from... I felt that vibe from you. Sorry... I'm just being honest, but maybe you think I'm a fool or I like to hallucinate things."

He grabbed her arms in a gentle way, he kissed her forehead and her cheeks, and said, "Irina, I felt exactly the same the first moment I saw you too. That's why you and me are standing here now. That's why I decided to call you and meet you. Since I met you I didn't stop thinking on you. I could've simply waited for Olga in her apartment today until she arrived home and treated me like a sexing or something like that, right? And now I have to think fast, because I also have to avoid her sexually... Maybe I'll

search for a hotel tonight and move tomorrow, I'll let you know, OK?". She said, "Wait! You know why I assisted that meeting on Saturday? Because I was hoping that maybe you will also be there... I knew Olga was going, and I thought that maybe she was going to invite you. But... Hey, please, don't leave me... Please... Don't leave Moscow yet. Promise me you won't leave yet. Can you?". He said, "Irina, I promise you I won't leave yet. We will see each other again, no doubt. OK?".

She smiled at him, and he felt she wanted to do something and also say something else. But she was like too shy or overwhelmed by something that stopped her from doing it.

Anyway...

They arrived at the supermarket. They said goodbye to each other. He went inside the supermarket and she started to walk back to her place.

André purchased the stuff he needed very fast.

When he crossed the main door of the supermarket he saw Irina standing nearby the entrance looking at him and smoking a cigarette. He walked straight to her with a smile on his face and said, "Hey, what are you doing here? I thought you were on your way back home."

He noticed that she had tears on her eyes, and that kind of left him speechless. He said to her, "Irina, what's wrong? What happened?". She said, "Nothing, nothing... I just wanted to tell you that... That...". He noticed that she was trembling, shaking like a child afraid of something... He was going to say something to her, but she said, "You can stay at my place since tonight, if you want. Or since tomorrow. Just let me know what you decide, please. I'll help you in everything I can, in everything! OK? Just count

on me, call me or write me, I'll be there for you. Remember I have two weeks off, OK?"

He was amazed, and said to her, "Irina... Wow! Thank you so much. I'll think about what you just said. Yes, I will go to your place. Just give some time to think when and how. Tonight won't be such a good idea. It's too late for that. But maybe tomorrow or on Wednesday. OK? I'll definitely let you know with time.". She said to him, "I'll prepare the bedroom since tonight, I'll put some order in the kitchen too. Can I ask you something, can you promise me something? Please, don't leave. Don't leave me.".

He felt this powerful vibration through Irina's voice and eyes, that he answered, "I promise, OK? Maybe in one or two days I'll move to your place, OK?". She then said, "I believe you, I trust in you blindly. I don't know why this is happening to me... But... Sorry... You better go now, it's getting late. OK?". He said, "OK. Thank you very much, Irina.". He kissed her on both cheeks and on her forehead and finally said, "Everything will be OK. I promise.".

He went back to the apartment.

As soon as he arrived he contact me on Skype and told me everything what happened. I was shocked too.

Olga arrived at 9 pm. They kissed in the doorway, she said, "I want to cook something, OK? Let me take a shower and I want to smoke with you too. Be right back". He said, "OK. I'll wait for you.".

She came out of the shower. He was on his laptop, and he started to act like if he was tense or worried about something. The plan he had in order to leave Olga began that same night...

She started to cook a sort of stew, she made some rice, a salad, a special sour sauce. She also cooked some fish for

her. It took her like 45 minutes, and then she told him that dinner will be ready in 20 minutes.

He started to tell Olga that his friend in Brazil needed a big favor from him, because he was going to start his own production company in Sao Paulo, and he asked him if he was able to make it over there and live for a couple of years, helping him with certain film related business. He also told Olga that his brother told him that he needed some documents that their father had concerning the property in the US, and that he stored those documents in a suitcase he left in a friend's house in Lima, and that his brother needed those documents urgently because there was a person interested in buying the property. Olga started to feel kind of worried, and at the same time she seemed a bit upset, so she said to him, "And what are you going to do?". He replied, "I don't know, the Skype call with my friend was kind of interrupted because he had an unexpected visit of a producer, who will also be involve in this new company. He wanted to call me later, but I said I needed to go out and then I was going to be with you. So, maybe we will continue to talk tomorrow because there was also an editor that was interested in talking with me concerning my books, and that maybe there was a possibility to translate them to Portuguese... Bla, bla, bla...". She giggled and said, "Hey, but that sounds good, right?". He said, "Yeah, no doubt. But... Anyway... Let's go smoke, deal?". She said, "Yeah.". They smoked a couple of hits, and she said, "I feel that you are a bit stressed, maybe you want to relax a bit, maybe I can do you a massage?". He noticed that she really wanted to have sex, and he really didn't want that anymore, he was still thinking in everything he was told and discovered about her today, and also thinking in Irina, with who he

felt more comfortable. He wanted to leave Olga as soon as possible, he started to think that maybe he'll have to push that a bit by making her feel uncomfortable or upset, but just a bit. After all, like André told me, he was grateful with Olga, for inviting him to stay at her place, for having sex with him too, and above all, without Olga he would've never met Irina.

She asked him again, "Would you like a special massage? Ahhh???" And she started to touch his thigh in a very suggestive way. He said, "No, my dear, don't worry. To be honest, for me it doesn't work that way. Sorry... Hahahahaha. Let's go to the kitchen, OK?".

She started to feel a bit upset, he noticed that, the typical spoiled-like girl that feels uncomfortable when things don't go the way she wants. He was doing a good job indeed.

They were having dinner, and he asked her, "What would you like to do later? Do you have any plans for tomorrow?". She said, "Well... I don't know, it also depends what you want to do, right? Tomorrow? Hmmm... The friend I visited today wanted me to go with her to a shopping mall, she asked me if I was going to be free, I told her that I will call her in the morning. She can't drive, and her husband works until 8 pm every day. She wanted to go around noon so we can also have lunch, and she needed me to drop her at home before 5 pm, when the babysitter leaves. But, I still don't know. Is it OK with you if I do that?". He said, "Dear, of course... Besides I'll be a bit busy with this Skype call and I have to check some things on the Internet too."

Suddenly her phone rang, her phone was charging on her bedroom. She went to answer, but she was talking in Russian, he didn't understand a thing. But, by the tone of



her voice, and by the way she laughed, he noticed that she got distracted. That phone call took like 20 minutes. He waited in the kitchen, she still didn't finish her dish. She came back, with a smile on her face, he immediately asked her, "Everything OK? Who was it? The friend that you visited today?". She said, "No... It was my ex-roommate. Do you remember that I told you about her, that she went to Italy?". He said, "Oh... Yeah, I remember, of course. How is she?". She said, "She's OK. She wanted to stay over there like for two years. But she told me that she was homesick. She told me that she missed Moscow, she missed me, her friends, the night life she was used to. She told me that she wanted to come back as soon as possible. Crazy girl...". He said, "Ohhhh... Will she come back here? Do I have to leave?". She said, "Noooooooooo... We will stay in my bedroom and she will stay in the other bedroom. Is it OK with you? In fact, I would really like if the both of you become good friends. I have a feeling we'll have lots of fun together. She also likes to smoke weed.". He asked her, "What's her name? You never told me her name.". She said, "Lera. Her name is Lera. She's a very close friend of mine, since many years ago.". He said, "Ohhh... Great! Does she speak English?". She said, "Yeah, of course, and Italian too. She's a very smart woman... But very smart... I learned many things thanks to her...". He noticed that by the tone of her voice and gestures, when she was talking about her, that she really was like talking about somebody she loved with passion. André immediately thought about all this, and said to himself, "This is it. I'm out of here tomorrow! Tomorrow!". She finished her meal, he started to wash the dishes and pots. She went to her bedroom.

Once he finished, he went to the bedroom where he was the first nights.

She then started to call him from her bedroom, and said, "Would you like to watch a movie?". He said, "One second, please. I'll be in the bathroom, OK?". She said, "OK".

He stayed in the bathroom for 15 minutes, without doing anything, just thinking and killing time, really.

When he got out of the bathroom he heard like she was speaking by phone again, but in a very low voice, like if she didn't want anybody to listen.

He stood in the doorway of the bedroom where he was, and then he heard one of the few words or sentences that he was able to understand in Russian... She was about to end the call and said, "Я люблю тебя.". Translated to English means "I love you".

He really was excited to hear that. He knew that he could've leave her that same night, and she would be OK. In the end, and like he always said, a girl that likes girls and says she likes men too is not 100% true, they will always prefer girls over men.

He went back to his laptop.

She then appeared on the bedroom where he was, and said, "Hey, I'm waiting for you...". He said, "I was going to your bedroom, but I heard you were talking with somebody on the phone. So I didn't want to interrupt you.". She said, "Ohhhh... Sorry... Did you listen? Did you understand?". He said "Nooooo... I came back to the laptop.". She said, "I was talking with my brother.". He looked at her and said, "Ohhh... Cool. How is he doing?". She replied, "He's OK. Sooooo... Let's go watch a movie?". He said, "OK".

While they were watching the movie, he stood up twice from the bed and went to the bathroom in the other room. He apologized with her and just said, "Fuck. It's just one of those days. Dinner was great, no doubt. Delicious I would say. But I'm not so used to curry and sour sauce too much. Sorry.". She giggled, but really didn't even pay attention to what he said. Because she really wasn't watching the movie either, she was chatting with somebody on the phone.

André felt very good. Things were under his control and they were going just like he planned them.

In one of those trips to the bathroom, he wrote a message to Irina, saying that he was going to call her tomorrow around noon, telling her that he wanted to move to her place in the afternoon. She replied, "Ohhh... André. It's wonderful. I'll wait for your call. Good luck!". And just in case, he told her to not send him any messages from now on until he called her tomorrow. He also deleted the messages she sent him.

When they were together on the bed, he didn't even ask her with who was she chatting on the phone.

Once the movie ended, she fell asleep. And she didn't even hug him that night. Which was kind of weird. He thought that she really was overexcited with Lera, no doubt. That was her real love and her real goal.

Tuesday morning... He woke up, went to the kitchen, then to the bedroom where his laptop was. He took a quick shower. It was still 10 am. Olga was in the kitchen, and asked him to join her.

She said, "I spoke with my friend, I need to be at her place before noon.". He said, "OK, sounds good.". She asked him, "What do you want to do today, you have any plans?". He said, "Well, everything what I need to do is on

the laptop and Internet.". She said, "I'll be back at 6 or 7 pm, OK?". And she also said, "Ohhh... By the way, Lera is coming tomorrow night, I'll go pick her up at the airport at 9 pm.". He said, "Wow! So fast... Is everything OK? Would you like if I go with you to pick her up?". She said, "Yeah, everything is OK. She's just having some tough moments over there. She needed to wait like two weeks until she got paid, but she was desperate. But I sent her some money to her account yesterday, so she can buy her ticket for today. No, it's not necessary. You can stay here and wait for us.". He said, "OK. Do you have any picture of her?". She grabbed her phone and showed him many pictures of her. She had this typical viper-like look in her eyes, a cross between a femme fatale and a gold digger. She was definitely a dike, according to him. But he said, "Wow! Very sexy girl.". She laughed and said, "Yessssss... She's very sexy.".

She then went to her bedroom and took a shower.

30 minutes later, she finally left.

As soon as she left, he cleaned the bedroom and the bathroom. He packed all his stuff. He wrote a note to Olga and left it on her bed. The note read:

"Dear Olga.

First of all, I want to say thank you for everything you did for me, and for everything that you shared. It was really nice to meet you.

Unfortunately, and I'm very sad about this, I had to leave today.

I really needed to leave for several reasons. I found a very convenient ticket for this evening to Sao Paulo, via Amsterdam.

Perhaps the other reason was... I didn't want to spoil your fun with Lera, sorry. It's obvious that you both are meant for each other.

Please, take care a lot.

Best wishes, always.

Once again, thank you very much.

I know you'll understand me."

He then called Irina. It was already 12:30 pm.

He asked her if she was able to pick him up at Olga's place in 15 minutes. She said, "I'm on my way."

Irina arrived... André was staring at the parking lot from the balcony. He left the lights of the living room and kitchen on. He left the keys over the note he wrote.

He finally left the apartment with his small suitcase.

He got inside Irina's car, he gave her a kiss on her cheek and said, "Done! I told you... Remember?". She laughed and seemed very excited about all this.

They went to the supermarket. He asked Irina to help him buy a new chip for his phone. She said, "Yeah, good idea. Smart enough.". He also bought some stuff to take to Irina's place. He said to her, "You don't mind if we go out for lunch, right?". She smiled and said, "No. Where would you like to go?". He said, "You have any favorite restaurant?". She replied, "Well... Maybe.". He said, "Well, choose one, choose the one that is far away. Hahaha...".

They went to her apartment, he left his things, and also connected the laptop. He opened his VK and Skype account, he removed Olga from her friend list and also blocked her. He said, "Just in case, I really don't trust too much in these type of women."

Irina was next to him all the time, he looked at her and said, "Done! Mission accomplished."

She smiled and looked at him like if she wanted to tell him something... But he said, "Let's go out, it's fun time. You are my guest now."

She kept smiling, and they went back to the car.

Irina took him to a Mexican restaurant, quite far away, they had to cross almost the entire city, it took like an hour and a half to get there. But they both enjoyed the ride.

Once they were having lunch, André started to explain to Irina many things, his goals and plans that he had for the near future. He told her about his past lifestyle, his experiences, anecdotes, how he got some money, and how he got involved with CGN, with VK, and the girls he met face to face in Ukraine. He also told her about the new book he wanted to write, and about the main character of that story, who was called "Luigi". He told her that since he decided to travel and meet these cam-girls he was playing the role of "Luigi". But, since he met her he wanted to be himself and not the character.

Irina started to laugh, and she looked at him with her electric-blue turquoise eyes, that had that deep innocence and tenderness. Irina had this look in her eyes that drove André crazy... Not even Katerina had this look in her eyes.

André felt very happy with Irina. He even started to think in what would the relationship with Irina end up. But he didn't want to spoil this new friend he had, because she was very delicate, sensitive and very smart.

After two hours of being in that restaurant they decided to go back home.

It was already like 7 pm when they arrived at Irina's place. He started to unpack his stuff in his new and temporary bedroom.

She went to take a shower. Then she asked him if he wanted to try some biscuits that she bought for him. She was so sweet. They started to taste and enjoy those biscuits while they talked again about his near future plans. She told him that he can stay in her place as long as he wants.

He suddenly came up with something, and said, "Irina, thank you very much for your hospitality, I'm very pleased and it's a real privilege to be here with you. I wanted to ask you something, you still have all this week and the next one free, right? Would you like to travel? Would you like to visit any city or place in particular here in your country? Choose the place, and you won't have to worry about anything, not a single coin, OK? Let's leave Moscow for a week, please. Let's leave tomorrow morning, doesn't matter if it's by plane or train. Let's plan that tonight, let's book a nice hotel, you will have your own room, don't worry about anything. But choose the place, please."

She smiled at him, her eyes were shimmering... She started to laugh and said, "Oh my god, but... But... You mean now? Tomorrow?". He said, "Yes!!! Yes!!! Please...". She felt excited about it, and said, "Well, I never did this before, I don't know where to go, but... There is a nice place not so far away, it's near a nice lake, a friend of mine was there last year, and the pictures were nice. I liked it, it has a hotel near a lake.". He said, "OK, let's go there. Let me find it on the Internet and I'll book two rooms there. Do we need to go by plane or train?". She said, "We can go by train or bus, it's only 5 hours away. But... But... Are you sure you want two rooms? We can share one, I think it'll be enough. Right? He said, "Dear, I don't want you to feel any kind of pressure or feel uncomfortable. Let's take two rooms. I think it will make you feel free too. Right?".

She said, "Well... OK, OK... You take care of that.". He said, "Help me with the booking of the train tickets, or we can go straight to the train station tomorrow morning in a cab?". She said, "Yes. There are trains to that place every hour, because many of them go to other main cities and make a stop in that town. No problem with that.".

She was excited, and didn't stop smiling all night. He said, "Let's spend a week away from all this. Is it OK with you?". She said, "Sure. But are you sure about all this?". He said, "Dear, I'm so sure like what I did today in leaving Olga's place. OK? I think you and me deserve this sort of vacation. Right? After all, it's one of the many ways I want to show you my gratitude. OK? Let me do it, please.".

She looked at him and smiled. After some minutes he went to the kitchen, Irina was cooking something, and he said, "Done. We will stay there for one week. Everything is already booked and paid. We don't have to worry about anything. They will even pick us up at the train station.". She laughed and said, "Wow! I'm so excited. Thank you!". She was making some pancakes and she wanted him to taste them with a special syrup she liked a lot. They ate together.

They spent some time talking in the living room and then they went to sleep.

Wednesday morning, he woke up very early. He noticed that she was taking a shower. He prepared a nice breakfast, with fruit juice and waited for her. She went to the kitchen and was amazed to see all this on the kitchen table. She said, "Wow! Looks so good. Thank you very much.". They both sat and had breakfast.

It was already 9 am, they left the place in a cab headed towards the train station. The train was leaving at 10:30 am. They were on time and there was plenty of space.



They arrived to the small town, it was more like a village, where the main attraction was this nice hotel next to a big lake.

The man that picked them up worked for the hotel.

They arrived at the hotel. They went to their rooms, that were next to each other's. Both of the rooms had a very nice balcony with a view towards the lake.

Minutes later they went to the restaurant inside the hotel, they had a light meal and then they went for a walk near the lake.

It was already like 5-6 pm, and it was kind of cold.

They had a great time together. They sat near the lake and started to talk about many things, she also started to talk about her life, her plans, her dreams, and she said, "I'm very happy that I met you. I think you are an amazing and very interesting man. I feel that I can talk with you about everything. And I mean... Everything!". She looked at him, while they both were sitting on a bench staring at the sky and the sunset over the lake. He noticed that she wanted to say something else, but she kept it with her. He suddenly asked her, "Tell me if you want to eat something. And please you can order anything you want, the room service is already included and I'll take care of anything. OK? Please, order something because otherwise I'll get angry with you...". She started to laugh and said, "Awwwww... André... André...". He turned around and looked at her eyes and said, "What? My beautiful and dear angel. Tell me.". She stared at him, and once again he noticed like if she wanted to shout or scream something from deep inside of her, but she was too shy or insecure to do it. But, she finally said, "I don't know what's wrong with me... I feel so good with you. I feel so... Like if... Hmmmmm... How to explain this? I had

in my life some boyfriends, one was from Poland, the other one from Germany, I liked them a lot, we had a very good time together, but... I don't know why with you I feel something that is so intense. I don't know how to explain this, sorry... I get confused and shy with you every time I look at you. Sorry, if I'm so silly... But...". He suddenly said to her, "Irina... If sometimes you don't find the proper words for what you want to express to somebody else, you can always use other ways to express that same feeling. Like when you paint, or like when somebody writes poems, or composes music. Do you understand?". She said, "I feel this is a magical moment in my life. And... I feel it began since the first time I saw you that day at the institute. I... I think it's...". He said, "Shoot, let it out, let it flow... What can you lose?". She suddenly grabbed his face with both hands, looked at his eyes and started to kiss his lips. They kissed for several minutes.

And like André told me, "It was like if the whole world stopped. Once again that feeling... Yes. And after we kissed, she was like glowing, so radiant... Stunningly radiant... Those wonderful and deep blue eyes she had were like ON now. She had a different look in her eyes. She finally broke the barrier that was stopping her to set free a feeling. I saw and felt this powerful energy from her as she still had her arms over my shoulders and around my neck. I saw and felt this powerful and vibrating connection that she was sharing it through her eyes... She was deeply in love."

A few seconds after that experience, she said, "I'm in love with you. I don't know how it happened, everything was so fast. And I mean, really fast. I feel like I know you from my entire life.". They then hugged each other for several

minutes, she kissed his cheeks many times. And suddenly she laughed and said to him, "You see? Now I know why I didn't like the idea of having separate rooms. Hahahahaha...". He started to laugh and said, "Irina, whatever happens between you and me, and I mean, whatever happens... I never want to lose your friendship. OK? Promise me that now. Promise that to yourself, please. Let's promise each other that while we are here in this beautiful place, this beautiful moment in our lives, that we will never stop being friends above anything else. Can you do that?". She didn't even hesitate for a second and said, "Yes! I promise that we will be friends forever." And she started to kiss his lips again. They hugged tightly and then they walked to the hotel.

When they were walking on the corridor towards their rooms, she laughed and said, "Your room or my room?". He laughed and said, "You choose!". But, he suddenly added, "Or... Let's make it more interesting and play a game... Hahaha... You go to your room. I'll go to my room. We take a shower and we rest for just a while. Then, I'll call you and we'll meet at the bar. Deal?". She started to laugh and said, "Deal!". He then said, while he was opening the door of his room, "Nos encontramos en un rato, señorita Irina.". She said, "Muy bien, señor André.". They both stayed in their own rooms for a while. He took a long shower, he started to think in everything that was happening. He really had a strong feeling for Irina. He even thought for a moment to throw away everything concerning the book, get rid of "Luigi", the projects and all that. But he had to be smart. Like he started to ask himself, "And then, what?". That was the thought that was permanently on his mind... "And then, what?".

He still had on his mind that very beautiful and amazing young girl, Katerina. He really liked her a lot. He really wanted to be with her, even if he met her as part of "Luigi's" experience. But Irina was something else. According to him, Irina had everything that Katerina had, in psychological and physical terms, but even more!!! Physically speaking, both girls were very, but very, attractive to him. Like he said, "Both of them were every man's dream...". But, there was something in Irina, something very deep, very special, that Katerina didn't have for now. Maybe because Irina was a bit older and more experienced. And like André also told me, "When Irina looks at me with those hypnotizing blue-turquoise eyes... I simply melt. When she looks at me and smiles, I already feel millions of electrical discharges that can't be compared even with the most intense sexual orgasms a man can have with any woman in the world."

After the shower, he turned on his laptop and answered some mails, some messages. He then put some clothes on, and silently went down to the bar.

He sat in the bar, and he asked the barman if he spoke English. The young guy said, "Yes, sir.". He asked for a Coke with ice, and told him he was waiting for a friend. He then sent a message to Irina, telling her he was already at the bar. She replied saying that she will meet him in 10 minutes.

The bar was kind of big, but it was kind of empty, there was only 3-4 couples and two waitresses.

He had a chat with the barman, who was also in charge of the music. He was listening to some sort of 70s Euro-Disco type of music, it was funny. André asked him if he had some 70s Funky Music, or if he ever heard of that. The barman said, "Yes, of course.". He told André that he

liked James Brown, Sly & The Family Stone, Funkadelic and a couple of other bands. André told him that he had a music store during the mid/late 90s, that he was a music collector, and that he also wrote a music guide. The guy was impressed. André asked him if he had a song called "That Was My Girl", the version by Funkadelic. The guy checked on the laptop and he said, "Yes, I do.". André said, "Would you mind if you put that song after the one that is playing now? Please.". He smiled and said, "Sure, my pleasure.". And right when the barman was going to click on play, he suddenly stared at the entrance of the bar and said, "Wow!". André turned around to see what grabbed his attention... It was Irina, who was walking straight to where André was sitting, while the song was playing.

She looked gorgeous and amazing, no sophisticated dress, not even heels, she was simply wearing jeans, sandals and a tight strapless top, she was showing her shoulders, she had her hair a bit wet, and almost no make-up at all. André looked at the barman, he smiled and said, "That song is for her.". The guy started to laugh. She arrived and said hello to the barman, she then sat on a stool next to André and gave him a sweet kiss on his cheek and said, "Buenas noches, señor André.". He said, "Buenas noches, señorita Irina. Todo bien?". She then laughed and continued in English, "Yes. I can say that everything is wonderful today.". He said, "I'm so glad to hear that, and I'm also glad to see that wonderful and enchanting smile of yours.". He added, "What would you like to drink. Let's celebrate...".

She ordered a cocktail with vodka, and she asked him, "Have you ever tried this drink?". He said, "No. But I'll order the same.". The barman prepared the drinks and

gave them the two glasses. André said, "A toast, for you, Irina. The most charming young lady I met in my life. Cheers!". She blushed and started to laugh, and she said, "I feel like I'm dreaming. I still can't believe that a couple of nights ago I couldn't even sleep thinking on you. And now I'm here with you.". He smiled and said, "Ohhhh... A toast for Olga, because without her I would've never had the chance to meet you.". He laughed again. She also started to laugh and looked at him, she said, "Thank you. Thanks for being part of my life, André.". They clinked their glasses.

They started to talk about what she would like to do, now that she was living with him. He also started to tell her about what he needed to do in the near future, in a matter of weeks, really. He asked her, "Are you sure you will be able to manage all this? Are you sure this is what you really want?".

Suddenly, right before she was going to answer him, her phone started to ring. She opened her beautiful eyes, like surprised by who was calling her and she said, "Oh my god. It's Olga.". He immediately told her to answer the call. She answered, and this is what he listened to, "Hello, Olga. How are you? No. I don't know. But, what happened? Sorry to hear that. Yes, well... He told me something like that, but in a message. Two weeks. I'm not in Moscow now. OK. Take care. See you soon. Goodbye.". She translated the entire conversation to him and she said that Olga sounded like angry and depressed.

He said, "You did well. She will not call you again.".

Anyway, she answered André, "Yes, well... I'll try to manage all this the best I can. For sure I worry and feel kind of anxious for what might happen. I think it won't be easy. But, I'll try. Is there any way you can avoid going

back to Brazil or your country?". He said, "It's complicated. I already know what sort of things can happen if I overstay in this country. I don't want any type of problems like that for now. What I would like to do is search for information on how I can get a permit or residence in order to stay in this country once I come back. Because if I come back it's only because of you, Irina. And like in most of the countries the easiest way to remain legally in a foreign country is by getting married, which is also a sort of issue. Documents, payments, and all that.". He added, "That's why, my dear and beloved Irina, I don't want to become an emotional burden for anybody. I don't want you to go through that, never. I know what you feel for me, I know what I feel for you, but we have to, and we need to, be very smart and mature enough in order to start something together. It won't be easy, but it's not impossible either, right? I already explained to you what type of individual I am for the system or for any society in general. I mean, currently. Right? I'm really... Nothing. I'm like a ghost. I don't have that necessary social and economic stability that a man really needs to start a relationship or family. I can be very selfish, I can even cheat or lie, in order to simply have sex with somebody. In this case, with you. I could take advantage of the circumstance, and once I have sex with you for a determined time, whether it's days or weeks, or even months, then I leave. But... I'm not like that, I don't like to use women in that way. If I use or manipulate people it's because they will also have fun for real, find happiness, feel good, and not end up feeling sad or disappointed. I would never do that to you, especially to you. I know who you are, I know what you are, what kind of mind, what kind of "soul" you are, and what kind of

heart and feelings you have. And I would never, and I mean it, I would never spoil that beautiful innocence, sensitivity and emotional level that you own. I like you, I really do. More than what you can imagine, but your feelings are more important than mine.”.

Irina was kind of speechless, she smiled at him, and said, “I understand what you mean, I really do. I know that we still need to know each other more, everything has gone so fast, very fast. I like you too, and also maybe more than what you think. We still even didn’t have sex, I know. I just wanted to ask you something, until now, until right now, even without having sex... What do you really feel for me? Do you really feel love and caring for me? I feel something from you, like if I feel your energy. Maybe I’m wrong, maybe I’m silly, and I’m only hallucinating. But, I feel something from you that I never felt from any other man, whether it was an ex-boyfriend, or just a friend. Do you really love me? Do you really care about me so much, that you would never leave me or forget about me?”. He said, “I love you, Irina. I love you since the first day I met you. And that love is still growing, it’s increasing every minute, every second. I would never leave you. Maybe for some time, because the circumstance will force me to do that. And because all this was really unexpected. According to the plans I had before traveling, by this time I should’ve been back to Sao Paulo or Lima. I wasn’t even supposed to visit Moscow.”. She said, “OK. I think everything is clear enough, but you know what, I’ll take the risk. What I feel for you is so special that I don’t want to let you go, at least not now.”. She grabbed his face with her both hands and started to kiss his lips, and said, “I love you, I would give my life for you.”. They kissed each other for some seconds.



Then they ordered another drink, the same one.

They also went to a place where they were able to smoke.

It was a starry night.

They ordered another drink. They were already a bit drunk. He said, "Would you like to have dinner? Please... Let's go to the restaurant. Deal? Let's eat something.". She agreed.

They went to the restaurant that was on the second floor. They had dinner, then they went to smoke outside the place again, sitting on a bench.

There was room service 24 hours, so they didn't worry if they wanted to order something later.

She looked at him and said, "Would you like to go to your room or mine?". He said, "And you? To what room you want to go?". She said, "I don't care which room, all I know is that I went to spend the night with you.".

They went to his room.

Once they were inside, she grabbed his hand and then hugged him. She suddenly started to unbutton his shirt, she started to kiss his chest and neck. She then took her top off. She took her bra off. She took his breath away, she was so beautiful and perfectly design by nature, another true and gorgeous goddess. He started to kiss her breasts, her neck, her shoulders. She started to unbutton his pants and started to stroke his cock. She asked him to lay on the bed, and for several minutes she started to suck his cock. Then she sat over him, she grabbed his cock and put it into her pussy.

According to him, it was something that he never experienced before with a woman, the way she moved, the way she tightened her pussy when she was having an orgasm, the way she looked at him straight into his eyes. It wasn't just sex. This was something else.

According to him, what he felt that night with Irina simply wiped out the previous two experiences he had with Olga and Katerina.

He was now on top of her, and he was about to cum, he was going to take his cock out, but she suddenly grabbed his butt in a very strong way and stopped him from taking his cock out of her pussy, and she said, "Only for this time, cum inside of me, please.". He ejaculated inside her, and the way she enjoyed it, the way she curled her toes, the way she wiggled her body, and the way she grabbed his arms. She really left him speechless. And if with Olga or Katerina he ejaculated a lot, this time he established a new record. Hahahahaha...

She was glowing, like glowing in the dark, even if the lights of the room were all on. Her blue eyes were on fire, like if she took some kind of god given drug. She looked at him and said, "I love you. I want you to be the last man I will have in my life until I die.". He smiled and said, "I love you too, Irina. And you really blew my mind since the first time I saw you and talked with you. I feel the same for you.".

They then fell asleep, surrounded by a cozy and ethereal atmosphere flowing in the room.

Thursday morning, they both woke up at 10. They drank some water, they ordered breakfast and took a shower together. She then went to her room to pick up some clothes.

He started to answer some messages on VK and Skype. He promised himself not to think for the rest of the week on what was he going to do or when was he going to leave Moscow.

During the following days and nights, it became quite a routine for them, walks near the lake, eating at the

restaurant, occasionally drinking something in the bar, staying in their rooms, talking, wondering, watching movies. And obviously, enjoying their bodies that melted into a single romantic and passionate fire of love.

They both decided to think in what were they going to do once they got back to Moscow.

She had a job where she was going to deal with Olga, like it or not. Unless... Like she said, "Maybe I should resign, and start looking for another job. In fact, I was going to leave that place a month ago. But it was closer than the other option I had. Although, on the other institute I was going to work more hours and earn more money, of course. But... What do you think?". He said, "Where and what would you really like to do? I mean do you enjoy working in some kind of institute as a receptionist? What about another place like a hotel or travel agency as a translator?" She replied, "I already did that, and I would also like to have time for myself and for you. I don't want to become a slave from 9 to 5.". He asked her, "Would you like to move to another neighborhood, or another city?". She said, "I thought about that, but I'm not sure. I really feel fine where I am now. I live close to some friends too. I like to see them from time to time. Sometimes they go to my place and we have fun. You don't mind if they visit me from time to time, right?". He said, "Noooo... Not at all. It's your place after all, your life, your rules, your laws. I'm just like a guest there, in one sense.". She said, "No, André. Please don't think like that, OK? Everything that I have is also yours, OK? I'm not that type of person, and I want you to feel good, or even more than good, with me. I adore you, André. If it was for me, if it depended on me, I wouldn't like to be far away from you a single minute from now on. OK? And I mean it.". He

looked at her, he smiled, she smiled, she stroked his hair and face, while she stared at his eyes. She then said, "I just want to ask you a favor. A big favor. It's not so much, I think. I know you will have to go back to do your stuff and solve some things. I know that. But, please... Try to do it as fast you can, if you really care about me. Because I really need you close to me. I'm very patient, like you. But I also know that I won't resist as much as you. So, please come back as soon as you can. OK? And I would really like to search for some information concerning immigration issues, marriage, etc. Of course, if you agree and if you really want to stay with me. I know you had a different lifestyle and that you weren't supposed to start a new life. I remember very well the things you told me. It won't be easy, I know. But maybe we can even start our own business, I really don't have a clue what kind of business, but there's always an option. We can even work together, and I would really enjoy that.". He smiled and said, "I agree with you in everything, to be honest. I really would've like to have a different circumstance than the one I have now. But it's pointless to think like that. Once I get the money from the property that will be sold, that's it, you know. I'll need to search for some kind of income, and not just for some bills, like in a part-time job, I'll need a nice income to feel secure and have certain stability.". She said, "I wanted to tell you something, I think now it's the time and correct moment to tell you this. You know that sometimes we have to tell some 'white lies' in order to protect ourselves. That place where I live now isn't rented, it's my property, I own it. Also, when my grandfather died, my father's dad, it was his will to give me one of the properties he owned. It's a very big country house, it looks like a small castle in the outskirts of

Moscow, not so far away. I get an income from that place, because it's for rent, and right now it's rented until the end of this year, there is a contract. So? Now you know that I really don't have to worry too much about getting an income, right? And to be honest, the day I go back to work I'll talk with Nastya and tell her I'll leave in 15 days or 1 month, so she can find a replacement, which won't be so difficult for her to find one.". He said, "Wow! Now this is something I didn't expect to hear.". She said, "I'll show you where that property is, at least from outside, it's near an old highway near Moscow.".

The day came when they finally left the hotel and took a bus back to Moscow. Then they took a cab straight to her place. Then they went to purchase some stuff to a nearby supermarket, it wasn't the same supermarket where he used to go when he was at Olga's place.

They started to share the same bedroom, and the room where he spent the first night he moved in became a sort of studio for her to paint. There was a big table, and in one extreme was where André sat and used to work on his laptop. He started to update his files and ideas for his new book. He also started to edit and/or translate the other three books.

On Thursday morning, she went to work. She worked from Monday thru Friday, from 9 am till 4 pm. She usually arrived home at 5 or 5:30 pm. She didn't go to work on her car, it was easier and faster for her to go there and come back by metro. The metro station was only two blocks away from her place, and only five blocks away from the institute.

When she arrived that morning, her boss, Nastya, told her that Olga didn't work there anymore. And that there was a new teacher. Knowing that Olga didn't work there

anymore she changed her mind in telling Nastya that she was going to quit. She preferred to not say anything. Once she got back home that afternoon, she told André that Olga didn't work there anymore. Irina felt better in one sense, so she asked him if he thought it was still a good idea for her to keep working in the same place. He told her that if she felt comfortable, and if it was OK with her, she should stay there.

That evening he already cooked something, so she didn't have to worry about that. Besides, she was also a vegetarian since a couple of months before meeting André.

After they had dinner they decided to watch a movie. Then they listened to some music. Then they enjoyed themselves once again by having a delightful sex session. They fell asleep together, hugging themselves.

Friday, the same routine.

Irina really didn't like to go out too much, but that evening she went to visit an old friend of hers. It was only a few blocks away. She was going to come back like at 9 pm.

That day he didn't go out, so we had a long Skype call talking about his next steps. I invited him to stay at my place for some months, because I was going to be very busy working with a production team in many different cities within Brazil.

Once Irina arrived, she was looking very happy. Her friend told her that she looked more radiant than ever, and Irina told her friend about André. Her friend was stunned after she told her the entire story. And as soon as she crossed the door of her place, she went straight to him, she hugged him and said, "I love you so much, my dear. I love you so much. You are the man I always dreamt of.". He

kissed her and said, "I love you too, Irina. More than what you can imagine.". They both went straight to her bedroom and for two hours they enjoyed their bodies once more.

Once they had dinner, she told him that she wanted to paint something. She asked him that she would like if both of them stayed together in the same room. She started to paint a big picture, inspired on the week they spent together at the hotel and their walks and moments near the lake. While he was listening to music and working on his books.

It was already 3 am. And she asked him, "Would you like to go out tomorrow? I want to take you for a ride to the outskirts of the city and show you the country house.". He said, "I think it's a wonderful idea.". They went to sleep.

Saturday morning, they woke up at 11. They did their usual stuff and went out at 1 pm. She took him to the place where her country house was. It was a beautiful place, surrounded by an amazing and plain landscape. The house was really big. But they only saw it from the gates near the road. And she asked him, "Would you like to live in this house?". He said, "Well... I know you have it for rent and it's also a nice income for you. Definitely it's a wonderful place to live away from the chaos and daily routine of the city, no doubt. Answering your question, if this was my place, I definitely would live here and have lots of fun.". She said, "Hey... It's our place, OK?". And she looked at him and smiled with her big blue-turquoise deep eyes. She whispered to his ear, "I would like to marry you, and start a family with you. Our children will be safe and have lots of fun with us here.". He smiled and said, "That sounds amazing, like a dream that comes true for me.". She said, "It's my dream too, and you are part of it.

I love you.”. They hugged while they stared at the house together.

Then they got in her car and she drove back to the city. They stopped at a nice restaurant to have dinner. Then they went back home.

Several weeks passed... The same happiness and romantic scenes repeated every day and night. They were a perfect example of a perfect couple. A couple that truly understood each other, supported each other, and above all, they both worshipped each other for what they were. One night, they talked about the time that he still had left to stay in her country, he had to decide which day and at what time he was going to leave.

It would only be a temporary absence. But he still really didn't know exactly how long will that trip back to Brazil and then Perú would take.

He really didn't want to leave Irina, but he was forced to do it. He had to solve some pending issues first. He wanted to get rid of all that before he finally settled with Irina in Russia.

For sure all this was going to be more difficult for her, she needed to be very patient and be very strong while she was going to struggle against that sadness, due to the fact that the man she loved so much was going away. Like she said, “Even if you leave for some hours, I already miss you like if you left for years.”.

No doubt, this was going to be one of the toughest decisions he would take in his entire life.

A few days later, on a Saturday afternoon, she dropped him at the airport. He was headed to Sao Paulo via Istanbul.

After that long and tedious trip, he arrived at the airport in Guarulhos, Sao Paulo, on a Sunday afternoon.



I picked him up, and as soon as he came out from the gate of arrivals and I saw him we hugged like true cosmic brothers. I was so happy to see him again, and he was also so happy to see me. But, yeah... There was a certain sadness in his eyes too. I did my best to encourage him and cheer him up, he would have to do all of his pending stuff as soon as possible.

He would also have my place to finish all the writings and translations of his books.

That night we both had a Skype call with Irina. Yeah, that girl was really in love with him. She was so beautiful and so nice. In my opinion, she was an angel. I perfectly understood what my friend was feeling and going through. I congratulated him after we ended the call with Irina. "Man, don't let go that girl... Don't leave her for so long. Go back as soon as possible.", I also said to him.

I had a few days off before I had my trip to a distant city in the country, and then I was going to come back in like 2-3 months.

During my days off, we spent time talking and occasionally going out. We smoked some nice weed listening to music, staring at the city from the main window. Recalling all the years since we met each other back in the late 90s. I remember saying to him, "Man, you really have to write that book. You should promote the four of them together. It would be cool if you build a website with those four books.". He said to me, "Max... At the beginning I wanted to do all this just for myself. Now I feel I want to do it for Irina too. Perhaps my future will depend on what happens with these books. I don't have any other thing to do. Yes, I still would like to do and play some music, like get deep and kind of serious into that too. Maybe in that country house I would be able to do

such thing. But, then... Should I forget about going back to the US?". I told him, "Man... If I were you, I would stay with Irina over there. Enough said?". We laughed and smoked another joint together.

The morning after, I left. He would remain alone at my place for the next 2-3 months. He would spend his time doing his job with the books. He had lots of fun there, fun in his own way.

He also spent lots of hours talking with Irina, almost every day (night for her).

But... Part of his job was still to figure out what will happen with the main character of his book, what will "Luigi" end up doing? So, after a week or so of being alone, André started to log in to CGN again.

On his first night in CGN, after months of not logging in, he started to chat with some old "friends", with some "models" and some members. He was very discreet about what he went through the past months. When he was in CGN he played the role of "Luigi".

One night, when he was fooling around checking the homepage of the website, he recognized a girl, her face was familiar to him... It was Lera, Olga's girlfriend. He logged out, and enter her room as a guest, only to see what she did and how she really was, concerning her role in that website. She was a nude "model", she used to undress in Public Chat, and do "cum shows" in Privates. Suddenly, she wrote on her topic that a "model" called "Angela" was going to join her for the next two hours, and she also wrote a new topic, "Girl-Girl Cum Show in Public Chat – All tips are welcomed – Tips make us wet!". Suddenly, the other girl showed up, imagine what... It was Olga! He couldn't believe it. She was back in CGN.

He stayed in that virtual room watching the show, how they both touched each other, kissed, licked their pussies together, and the tremendous amount of money they earned that night. It was amazing, in one sense. Members tipped them no less than 100-200 dollars, and they even got a couple of tips over 3000 dollars! Holy shit! In one night! Such a nice way to earn money, right? He noticed that they were at Olga's place in Moscow. Of course, for CGN and for all those members, they were in Ukraine, not even Belarus like she used to say when she had her previous account.

Anyway... André lit up a cigarette and said to himself, "Fuck! I really saved myself when I left that fucking bitch. Another devil in disguise... Hahahahaha..."

The day after, he kept logging in to CGN. He started to read old chats, like the chats he had with Katerina before even expecting to meet her. The chats with Polina and the other girl he met in Kharkiv. The chat with Olga before he went to Moscow. It was funny, it was a strange feeling indeed. He said to himself, "Man! I fucked with two of these gorgeous cam-girls, I kissed and spent time with one of them, with the other one I spent a few hours and helped her get out of this "hell" or "circus of perversion". Hahahaha... Shit! Hey "Luigi"... You're the man, ah?"

Sometimes he had Skype calls with Katerina and with Irina. He really missed both of them. The both of them were still waiting for him to go back. He would have to choose one of them, or get rid of one of them. Ukraine or Russia? Katerina or Irina? Like he said, "Well... Right now it's pointless to decide that. Until I get my money and solve other details. Meanwhile, I'll be "Luigi". At least to distract myself. Otherwise, I will really start feeling sad during this period that just began. And I really need to

feel motivated, and not necessarily feeling like if I went through all that, but like a witness, without identifying or over-identifying myself with what happened during February and April.”.

He spent most of his time being online in CGN and VK, once again he switched his lifestyle, due to the difference of time between Ukraine and Brazil. He preferred to stay awake until 5 or 6 am, sometimes even till 8 am. He used to sleep until 12 pm. Breakfast at 2-3 pm, lunch/dinner at 9-10 pm. His busy hours were during midnight and early morning.

But André promised himself not to spend money in CGN during this period, he was going to use his charm and good manners in order to get to know some girls.

One night he started to chat with a very beautiful young girl from Ukraine. She was kind of new, she wasn't totally non-nude, she told him that she got naked only in Private Shows, and not for everyone, she had to like the guy too. That first night (morning for her) they chat about everything, after a couple of hours she started to be very curious about him, she wanted to see him, she asked him if he could turn his webcam. He noticed that she really charged tokens for that, she asked like 20 dollars to open a webcam. He told her that he didn't have tokens at the time. But she insisted and told him that she really didn't care about that, because he wanted to see him. He turned on his webcam, and she suddenly opened her beautiful green cat-like eyes and blushed in front of her camera. She wrote him that she was impressed and that she couldn't believe what she was staring at. She said, "Wow! Oh my god. You are so cute and so handsome.". He thought she was simply being clever and that she was saying all that so he can become a regular member and

in the end tip her. But her gestures confused him, because she really started to show, by her behavior and the things she started to say, that she really had a crush on him. She was very young, 20 years old, her name was Masha. They continued chatting about his trip to Ukraine, what he did over there, that maybe he would like to live in that country for some time, like 2-3 years, and that if he had the chance to meet a woman that really loved him maybe stay forever. She started to laugh, and wrote him, "Well, that won't be so difficult for you. If I see you on the streets, I would definitely like to meet you and even more... Hahahaha... You look so young, and I melt with your smile... Hahahaha...". He noticed that she started to ignore other members in her room, they started to complain that she wasn't answering their PMs. She suddenly turned off her camera, she was away. But she continued to chat with André in PM, and she asked him if he had Skype. He said, "Yes", and gave her his Skype account. In a matter of 15 seconds he heard the notification of Skype, it was her. And she said, "Please, this is my personal Skype, don't share it with anybody, OK?". He answered, "Of course, Masha. I would never do that. I understand perfectly all this.". She said, "Great!! Listen my dear, I have to go now. I have to go out for a couple of hours. I will come back home and send you a message. Would you like to have a Skype call later?". He said, "Yes. Thank you very much." She said, "OK. Deal! I'll be back in two hours, but I won't be in CGN, OK?". He said, "OK. Thank you. I'll be waiting for you.". She then logged out. It was like 2-3 am, so he decided to wait until she came back.

Around 5 am, he got a message from Masha on Skype, she wanted to call him. He said, "Please, call me.". She

called him, he answered the call. Her English was pretty good, and she was very friendly and outgoing, she had a different attitude with him while they were talking. She suddenly said, "You really blew my brain, André. I feel like electricity all over my body when I see you. Hahahaha...". He said, "Awwww... Masha... Thank you so much. For me it's a real honor and I feel fortunate to talk with you. I never expected this, I'm surprised, to be honest. You are such a beautiful young lady. I would say, such a perfect young lady. I'm deeply fascinated by your outstanding beauty.". She said, "Awwww... Thank you so much. I would stay hours watching you, André. Honestly, I needed to do other things, but I couldn't resist the experience of being with you on Skype, so I came back home as fast as I could.". He said, "Ohhh... Masha... Please... Don't exaggerate... Hahahaha...". She said, "I'm serious André, I don't know what's happening to me right now. I feel like I'm burning inside...". He started to feel a bit nervous, this girl seemed to be dead serious, her eyes and gestures were obvious, and if she was acting, she was damn good at it. She then asked him, after some seconds of complete silence when she was only staring at him, "Have you ever had a long Private with a girl in CGN? I bet you had a special virtual girlfriend or not? I saw in CGN that you have many points and that you are a Platinum Member, right?". He said, "Well, to be honest I never had a Private Show or Group Show. Yes, I had some good friends there, but they don't work there anymore. And like I told you earlier, I never tipped asking something in return, and less if it had to do with nudity. I usually had chats with non-nude, like I already told you.". She said, "Did you ever got naked for a "model" in CGN?". He said, "No dear, sorry. I never did that, and I don't think I'll do it. I mean, I don't

think I'll have that experience or moment with a girl there. I remember long time ago there was a girl that asked me to do that, but then I stopped chatting with her, for other reasons."

She started to laugh and said, "You are so cute. I saw some naked men in CGN when I had Private Shows. But, to be honest, I really didn't like what I saw. But, you know, I'm a young woman, like a kitten, I'm very curious... And... If I ask you to get naked will you get naked for me? Hahahaha... If I want to enjoy and see a man naked and ask him to cum for me it would definitely be you, seriously.". He was speechless, and he started to laugh. She then said, "You won't be the only one naked here, OK? If you want, I can get naked too. If I take my top off, will you take your t-shirt off?". He said, "I can't say no to a goddess like you. I think you'll be my boss now.". She blushed and opened her eyes like when a feline sees its prey. She said, "I just felt that electricity all over my body again... Hahahaha... And don't think I'm doing this like if it's my job, OK? I'm doing this because I really like you and feel I want to do it. I'm tired of faking in CGN and watching men I don't like.". He said, "You're the boss, Masha.". She suddenly took off her top, she had a nice white bra. She said, "Your turn...". He took off his t-shirt, and it was like if her eyes were on fire. She was on a table, and suddenly took her laptop across a room and she sat on her bed, she started to manipulate the camera, and she asked him, "Do you see me fine, is it OK?". He said, "Yes, Masha... It's perfect.". She said, "You won't imagine how wet I am now, after you took your t-shirt off, I even can't believe it... Hahahaha... She took off her pants, grabbed the cam and she put it close enough to her panties and said, "You see, I'm not lying. Can you see that

it's wet?". He said, "Yes, Masha. I can see that it's wet." She said, "So? Your turn. Stand up, please.". He stood up, he was wearing shorts, with no underwear. She noticed that he was already hard. She said, "Wow! I see you are getting hard. Can you take off your shorts, pleaseeeeeeeeeee?". He took off his shorts, and she said, "Oh my god... Wow! Such a beautiful cock... Wow!". She took off her bra and panties, she was completely naked and started to play with her camera, moving it across her body. Then she put it back on the laptop and it had a wide view of her, she was on her knees over the bed. She said, "Don't sit down, please. Stand up. Play with your cock, please. Imagine I'm touching you, and you are about to fuck me.". He said, "OK, my queen.". She said, "How much I like your body, André. I would really like to have sex with you, I'm serious.". He said, "Well, it depends on you. Would you really like to meet me if I go to Ukraine?". She said, "That's obvious, I live in Kyiv. You won't have to travel that much. Hahahaha... I can even pick you at the airport, so you won't be raptured by any woman. Ukrainian women are dangerous, you noticed that, right?". He said, "Yeah. I agree with you 100%". She kept touching her amazing beautiful breasts, such perfection, such perfect nipples, such perfect body. She suddenly asked him, "Would you like a close-up of my 'paradise'... Hahahaha... Look!!!". Fuck! This girl was really dangerous, he was about to go crazy, seriously. That image of her pussy remained on his head for weeks. Man!!! It was so pink, phosphorescent paled-pink, it really glowed, and it was like spilling transparent honey. So wet, so juicy... She really took his breath away, no doubt. She put back the camera on the laptop, she said, "I see you are harder now... Hahahaha... Ohhhhhh, André... Mmmmmmmmm...



Mmmmmmmmm...". She started to finger her pussy, she started to stick two fingers and then three, she couldn't stop staring at him, she started to roll her eyes, she was about to have an orgasm, she was also sweating. Suddenly she started to moan, her face was already red, and she kept looking at him, she didn't stop looking at him for a second, only when she rolled her eyes. She started to curl her toes, she had her second orgasm. He couldn't believe it. He kept stroking his cock all the time. She started to sigh, breathe deep, and said, "Your turn... Your turn, please... Show me how much cum you have for me...". He stood in a perfect angle and fixed the webcam so she was able to enjoy the view. And well... Like it was usual with him, since he started to deal with all these Eastern European beauties, he ejaculated enough amount that she said, "Wow! Oh my god... Oh my god... I can't believe this... Oh my god! André!!!!". He said, "Thanks to you dear, and your beauty.". She said, "Hey, I'm serious. Next time you are in Ukraine, and even if I have a boyfriend or if I get married, I'm not going to die without having sex with you, André. Did you hear me? I'm serious.". He started to laugh, and said, "Are you really serious? Come on...". She then started to type and send him a message. She then said, "I'm sending you my phone number and my address. Now you believe me?". She then asked him, "Now, be honest with me... Would you like to have sex with me? Yes or no?". He said, "Absolutely yes!!!!". She replied, "Deal!! Next time you have your feet on my country, you know there is a girl waiting for you, OK? And I don't care if takes you a month or a year, or 5 years. OK? I repeat, I don't want to die or leave this life without having sex with you, deal?". He said, "Deal!". He then said, "You don't mind if I go take a shower right?".

She laughed and said, "Can you take the laptop to the shower? Hahahaha...". He said, "Well, I wasn't thinking on that option now. But maybe next time?". She said, "Right what I wanted to hear, that there will be a next time for this crazy orgasm I had today. I never felt like this in my life. I had 4 boyfriends, 4 guys that fucked me, and none of them gave me the pleasure I felt with you today. Amazing, right?". He started to laugh and said, "Wow... Masha... Masha... Mashaaaaa...". She said, "Whaaaaat?". He said, let me take a shower, let me rest for a while, it's 6:45 am here. Can we talk later?". She said, "Ohhhh my god... Yes, sure. Sorry, I forgot what time was it for you. So sorry... Dear, please rest. Yes, when you wake up send me a message. I'll go out again, but I'll come back before you wake up. Don't worry, I'm not going to be in CGN, OK?". He said, "Why not?". She answered, "Because I want to be with you, and talk with you, OK?". He said, "Cool. Thanks!!! I want to talk with you something important, OK?". She said, "OK. Please rest... And thanks, dear. You can't imagine how good I feel right now, even the sheets that touch my skin feels like electricity... How much I would like that you were here with me right now... Anyway... Sweet dreams. Poka Poka!". He said, "OK, my dear. Thanks to you. Thanks for sharing your heavenly body with me. Take care, have a nice day.". He ended the Skype call.

He then went to take a shower, and he couldn't stop laughing of what he just experienced. It was so silly, so ridiculous, but at the same time so intense, it was better than masturbating watching a porn magazine or porn movie. He then went to sleep for a while.

He woke up at 1 pm. He turned the laptop on, he found some messages from Katerina, Svetlana and Irina in VK

and Skype. He answered them, he had a Skype call with Irina. He really missed her, he really thought that she was the woman he needed and with who he wanted to spend the rest of his life. He loved Katerina too, and like he used to tell me, they were different from one another. But for him, Irina was a step forward in experience and maturity, he needed to do less "work" with her. She was in the same wavelength that he was. Katerina was a wonderful girl, very beautiful, perfect too. But he thought she was too young for him, mentally speaking. He would decide where and with who he will stay, but once he was about to travel again. For now, the both of them were on standby. Besides, he had a feeling that anything could happen during this period. It wasn't going to be a period of 2 or 4 months, maybe it was going to take a year, maybe even more. So, like he already determined, "Let's wait and wait and wait, let's hold on, resist and have fun with the experiences that "Luigi" would go through on CGN.". He then had a Skype call with Masha. She asked him when was it possible for him to visit her, and he answered her the truth, that it might be no less than 6 months and no more than a year. She kind of felt a bit disappointed, it's common in young people, in young girls like her, they want everything immediately, like a whim. He had an idea, and he told her to think about it very well. Because if she really wanted to meet him as soon as possible, even if it was only to have sex and nothing else, he offered her to travel to Brazil. He would buy the tickets for her and send her a nice amount of money. She was deeply surprised. But before she was able to say anything, he said, "Listen, please. Masha, you can come here for some days, or weeks, I'll take care of anything you need. You'll have a return ticket to Kyiv, and some money for yourself. If you

agree, if you accept this, you can come here in two days. Of course, all you need is your passport. You don't need visa or go through any other type of silly process. Just go to the airport, make a connection in another airport, and I'll pick you up here." She seemed excited, very excited. But she really needed to think about it, at least that's what she said.

Now, why did she need some days to think about it? He really didn't know that, and he really wasn't interested in knowing either. He had it very clear, Masha would be only a sexual experience, period! He told her, "Masha, take some days to think about, we won't communicate in some days, it's better that way. Take your time, 3-5 days, the time you need. I'll be in this place for 3-4 months, OK?". She agreed and said, "I will think about it. I've never been abroad. The idea for me is more than exciting. But, I need to think about, I'm a little bit scared. I hope you understand." He said, "Masha, yes. I understand you perfectly. Just have in mind something, you will have your roundtrip ticket, you'll have your own money. So if you don't feel comfortable or if suddenly you simply want to go back, there'll be no problem. The only thing we will need to coordinate is the dates for the tickets. And even if you have certain return date, you can even change that by paying a small fine, which you'll have enough money in case you need to do that. Anyway... From now on, I won't say anything else until you take a decision, and if you have any question, please don't hesitate in asking me. OK? I will also book you a hotel room here. There's a nearby hotel so you can feel secure and have the freedom and privacy you'll need or want. OK?". She said, "OK. I'll call you or contact you when I'll take a decision. OK?". He said, "Deal!". They ended the call.

André spent the following days and nights in CGN. He started to virtually meet many beautiful Ukrainian and Russian girls, nude and non-nude. He didn't purchase tokens, he wanted to do all this without tipping the girls for anything, it was a sort of test too, to see if they were only interested in getting some money or if they really enjoyed his company.

He met and had chats with around 6 new girls almost every day. At least 2-3 girls that he virtually met had a virtual sex experience with him. Some of them asked him for his Skype, others simply wanted to see him naked. And these girls usually charged members for doing such thing, but seems that these girls liked him or felt attracted to him, so they just enjoyed the view. Some of them wanted to see him masturbating or naked every day, some of them became kind of obsessed with him. And some of them also wanted to meet him in person, and told him that they would like to have sex with him in "real" life too.

Now, this masturbation experience by being online lasted a few months. It was interesting for him to analyze and experience by himself that feeling, and like he told me, "It was all psychological. It was like a feeling of certain power and satisfaction to do that while these girls were watching you. These girls were young and very beautiful, but they were also very curious, sexually speaking."

Some of these girls, not all, also liked to masturbate while they saw him. Most of them simply wanted to see him doing it, even if the girls were fully dressed (non-nude girls). But the feeling for a member was the same.

And all of this was also very addictive for members. Like a drug, like a hard drug. Most of members were hooked doing this for years, and they knew pretty well that in

their "real" lives they weren't going to have sex with such beauties. They really thought that if they saw a girl like these on their neighborhood, or in some bar or club, these type of girls wouldn't even look at them. The majority of these members were already married or had girlfriends. But they really thought that the type of girls they had the chance to chat with in CGN were far prettier and sexier than their own girlfriends/wives. Like one member once told André, that he even used to enjoy more masturbating watching a beauty in CGN, and being watched by her, than having sex with his own wife. That member sent André a picture of his wife, and she was beautiful too. But, what was really happening here? Interesting fact, right? And all this wasn't only for 1 or 2 members. This was kind of a common situation or fact for many members. They preferred and enjoyed having virtual sex, rather than having "real" sex at home with their wives or girlfriends.

Anyway...

One week passed, Masha didn't answer, and she didn't appear online in CGN or on Skype either. And he really didn't want to write her.

In fact, if she answered that she wasn't able to accept his offer he was going to feel better than if she accepted it. But, three days later, Masha and André had a Skype call. She only wanted to ask him if it was possible if she traveled with her friend, another girl, but not a cam-girl. This meant another roundtrip ticket, and perhaps some extra money. She also asked him approximately how much money was he going to send her for this trip and her expenses.

He told her that if she wanted to travel with a friend, he had to know who was she. Second, that they both would

share a room in a hotel. Third, he was thinking in giving her 1,000 dollars, for her alone, and she didn't really have to spend in food or transport, he was going to take care of that. He told her that if she was coming with a friend he would only add 500 dollars. And that they would only stay in a hotel for 3-4 nights. And if she or both of them decided to stay more time they could stay in the apartment where he was because there was plenty of room.

She agreed, she said that he can purchase those two roundtrip tickets from Kyiv to Sao Paulo. She gave him her full name and passport number, and her friend's too. She also sent him pictures of her friend, so he can know how did she look like. She said that because it was the first time she was traveling so far away, she only wanted to stay 5 days, no more. Besides, she was really studying and 5 days were enough, otherwise she can have problems at her university. She had to travel starting from a Wednesday night, arrive on a Thursday night or Friday morning, stay with him until Monday morning, Monday night she had to be on a plane again, so she was able to assist to her lessons on Wednesday morning. He thought it was more than perfect. He agreed, he was going to send her 1,500 dollars for her and her friend once he purchased the tickets and send them to her by e-mail. He told her everything that she needed to do so she can enjoy the trip. And that it was going to take him maybe a couple of days to find the perfect dates for this trip. She was excited with all this, she said, "Please, I hope you understand me. I hope you don't think that I don't trust in you. But it's the first time I will travel abroad, and I really didn't want to do it alone, not only for security reasons, but also to feel better and comfortable. Please, I hope you

understand.". He said, "Masha, I understand. It's OK. Everything will be OK. Even if we never have sex, everything will be OK. I promise.". She laughed and said, "Noooooooo... No! I want to have sex with you since the first night. My friend will stay at the hotel and I'll stay with you. OK?". He laughed hard and said, "Masha, are you really sure about all this? Don't you think it's a bit crazy for you, being so young?". She said, "I want this. I want to do this. Besides, I always heard that life is just once. Right? And I would really like to experience all this now. I would really like to feel what is it to be in your arms and all the rest... OK?". He started to laugh again, but he also thought that this wasn't really OK. That maybe this girl had a hidden plan or that she was going to stay with the money and never catch that plane.

But, he was curious to see in what will all this end.

Yeah, he felt a bit bothered in spending around 5,000 dollars in this experience, but like he said, "If I get to have that girl here and have sex with her, and then she goes back to her country, it will be an awesome and satisfying experience for me. This fact, this experience will mark the end of my research in CGN. And it will close it with a final flourish. More than enough! "Luigi" would really become a sort of king of CGN. Hahahahahaha...".

André told me about all this, I was even going to be there if she arrived with her friend. I was going to catch a flight wherever I was. And at least stay for some hours and meet these girls too.

It took him a day and a half to purchase the tickets he really needed for Masha and her friend.

The morning after he went to Western Union and sent her the money. He went back home and called Masha. She was very excited. He gave her the code to withdraw



the money. He also sent her the tickets so she was able to print them over there.

All this happened on a Friday afternoon, so she was going to leave Kyiv on a Wednesday night, make a connection in Madrid during Thursday morning and arrive on Thursday afternoon (Brazilian time). She would remain in Sao Paulo from Thursday afternoon till Monday morning. She would then leave on a Monday afternoon, and finally arrive to her country on Tuesday night.

He personally went to book a double bed room in a nice hotel that was only 4 blocks away from the apartment.

He called me telling me all this, and I told him to take my car. If I was going to make it, just to meet these girls for a couple of hours, it had to be since a Saturday evening till Sunday morning.

He spent 3,000 dollars in tickets. 1,500 dollars for Masha and her friend. 300 dollars for the 4 nights in the hotel, breakfast included.

André thought and said to himself, "Let's see if she really arrives next Thursday afternoon... Hahahaha... Let's see if all this was worth 5,000 dollars."

He had two more Skype calls with Masha, in one of those calls she was with her friend, Elena. Her friend was a very beautiful brunette, with huge green eyes, but she didn't speak English so much. He told Masha that he was going to pick them up on Thursday at 4 pm.

Finally, Thursday morning, He woke up at 9 am, had breakfast, and at 2 pm he went to the airport.

Once there, he checked if the flight was confirmed at the scheduled time. And yes, it was confirmed.

At 4 pm he went to check the arrivals on the screen and the plane had already landed.

He went to the gate where the passengers arrived. It was already 4:30 pm. The passengers from the flight that came from Spain began to appear. They were coming out from the gateway. More and more people, but no sign of Masha and her friend.

He started to think that maybe they didn't take the flight and it was all a scam.

Less people coming out, he started to laugh, he turned around looking to the surroundings. He then saw two guys that began to say in loud voice, "Wow! Wow! Hey... Hey... Look at that... Look at that..."

André turned around towards the exit of passengers that just arrived... He suddenly saw two white and radiant, gorgeous girls walking out... Fuck!

He felt like the world stopped around him... It was Masha and her friend...

Masha started to wave her hand to André, the guys that were watching at them suddenly looked at him and laughed, they showed their thumbs like saying, "You're the man... Man... Lucky you!"

He approached the two girls, everybody was staring at the three of them. She hugged him very tight, she then introduced him to Elena. Each of them only had a small carry-on. They went to the parking lot.

"Welcome to Sao Paulo!", he said.

He opened the trunk of the car to put their luggage. He opened the doors for them, and before Masha was going to get in the front door, she suddenly started to kiss André on his lips and said, "Thank you, thank you so much...". He said, "You are welcome, my dear."

They started the 1 hour ride back to the district where André was living. The weather was fresh and cloudy.

They started to talk in their language and in English too. This was so funny... André was driving my car with these two gorgeous beauty queens towards the neighborhood where we lived, Vila Mariana.

They went straight to the hotel. Masha was very happy with everything, Elena too. But Masha was really excited about all this, she was really very friendly and outgoing. He left them in their rooms, so they can rest for a while. He told her to call him or sent him a message, the apartment was only 4 blocks away. She felt safe and comfortable with that.

He said, "You girls, please sleep or rest for a while. Once you are ready I'll come back and pick you up to go eat something in a very cool place, OK?". She hugged and kissed him again, and said, "Thank you so much!! You make me feel so happy, all this experience is like a dream for me."

He then left and went back to the apartment.

A couple of hours later, Masha called him and said they were ready to go out. He went to pick them up and took them to a typical Middle Eastern-Brazilian well-known restaurant called Esfiha Imigrantes.

He said, when they were already sitting at the table, "This place is not an exclusive type of restaurant, OK? But, it's very well-known in this city, and it's always packed because of the type of food and combination of dishes here. Everybody in the city knows about this restaurant, so the two of you can say that you were here... Hahahaha..."

They liked the food and the classic pineapple juice with mint and milk. They felt very happy. And that was the main goal of André. He really wasn't so interested in

having sex with any of them, but... He still had to fulfill "Luigi's" experience.

They went back to the apartment. He left the car in the parking lot, and then he showed them the apartment, so both of them had an idea of where it was and how it looked like.

Elena wanted to go back to the hotel. The three of them went walking, so the girls got familiarized with the neighborhood and know where exactly the apartment was located.

As soon as they arrived to the hotel, Elena said goodbye, and Masha told André to wait for her 10 minutes in the lobby.

She came down and said, "What are you going to do now? Are you busy, do you have any plans?". He said, "No, I'm not busy. These days I'll dedicate all my time with the both of you.". She said, "I would like to go back to your place and drink something.". He said, "Sure, it sounds like a great idea. But are you sure you don't want to rest?". She said, "I'm fine. I'm so excited about everything that I'm not even tired. Besides... I would really like to spend the night with you...". She smiled and kissed his lips. He said, "Whatever you wish it will come true then.".

They went back to the apartment, on their way back he showed her some local shops, restaurants and supermarkets, in case they needed to buy something. He asked her what would she like to drink. She said, "Some light beer would be enough for tonight, thanks.". He said, "Cool, I have that at home.".

They arrived to the apartment, they started to drink and talk about many things, he showed her all his stuff and files. She was very surprised for that. They were sitting on

a couch together, smoking some cigarettes, she started to say that this trip really was going to affect her life in such a positive way. Her first trip abroad, the first time she takes a plane, and such a long flight to the other side of the world. She started to laugh and said, "I was so afraid at the beginning. I have to be honest with you, I was going to say no in coming over here. I asked three friends to come with me, they thought I was crazy, that maybe you were some sort of psycho or serial killer. They were so wrong, so stupid. Elena wasn't sure to come with me. It took me three days to convince her. Thank you so much for all this experience, André.". He said, "You are welcome, Masha. Thanks to you for coming. For one minute I thought you weren't coming. It was so fast, everything was so like... Risky..."

She suddenly started to touch his face and started to kiss him. She said, "I just want to let you know something... In these days and nights that I'll be here I want to spend all my time with you. I'm all yours... OK? ALL YOURS! And I want that, because I like you a lot..."

He wasn't even able to reply to her, as she kept kissing him passionately. She then stood up and totally undressed in front of him... She said, "Make me yours... Please."

He started to gently touch her body with his fingertips, he noticed she started to have goosebumps all over her skin, he stroked her long blonde hair. He then stood up, and she sat down, he took her pants off, his underwear off, and started to slowly suck his cock for several minutes. He took her to the bedroom, and for the next 2 hours he completely satisfied this fascinating young Ukrainian woman. The way she moved, the way she moaned, the way she came and went crazy was amazing.

Once again, and thanks to having sex with such a beauty, she was impressed of the amount of semen he ejaculated. She then said, "I go crazy by the way you cum... It's fascinating for me... Next time I want you to cum inside me..."

Man... Man... Man!!!!

This girl had such sexual chemistry inside and out. She was like an angel, it was like having sex with a virginal and angelic female. She finally said, "For me it feels like the first time I have sex... I will always remember you as my first true man...". They were both soaked with their sweat, she started to kiss him again, and hugged him tenderly for several minutes. Then they both went to take a shower.

This girl was really a true temptation. Such a fresh, firm, thin and perfectly designed body, from head to toes. He thought in taking her to his country and marry her there, so they would go back to Ukraine together and live happily ever after. Hahahahaha... He felt that this young girl would never leave him during the rest of his life. But, he had to put his feet on the ground...

André had stayed away from all this lifestyle and common experiences for years. I mean YEARS! He didn't have sex like in 10 years or more. And in less than 6 months he had sex with four stunning and supreme gorgeously beautiful young women.

Man!!!

Now... That's a comeback every man would like to go through. Right?

Like he told me, "All the women that I had sex with before was like if I really didn't have sex with them. That was all a big fucking nightmare compared with the women I met this year. I won't say I regret of what I fucked in the past

or what I had as a girlfriend in my past. No. I don't regret... But... After these four Eastern European girls, for sure I deleted all the previous information and experiences. All that was like living in period of mistakes and ignorance. I really never liked them, I was just following the "script", my instincts that were molded by the circumstance I was living back then. It feels like a past life, and perhaps it really is a past life in psychological terms."

She spent the night with him, she slept like a baby... Like a baby angel lying naked on his bed. The view was breathtaking... To describe the beauty of this girl with words was pointless. She was simply perfect... Divine!

They woke up at 10 am. It was Friday. While they were on the bed he suggested to her to go back to the hotel and not leave Elena alone. He told her that she can call him later and he would go pick them up. He wanted to take them for a walk to a nice big park nearby. She agreed and said, "Let me take a quick shower here, OK? Don't move, please.". She went to take a shower, and when she came out, she took the towel off and said, "Before we leave... Can you please do to me what you did last night? Please... Please... Or am I asking you too much?". She then jumped to the bed with a big smile on her face and spread her long and perfect legs wide open... He started to kiss her beautiful toes and feet, then her legs, her thighs, then he started to lick her pussy for several minutes. They both enjoyed themselves for another hour. Then they both took a shower, and minutes later they walked together to the hotel. He went back to the apartment.

Masha told everything to Elena, like the typical girl talk.

A couple of hours later the three of them went for a walk to the Ibirapuera park. Talking about everything, about Brazil and its people and customs.

Then he took them to a nearby exclusive bar known as "Let's Beer". André knew the people that worked there pretty well. The owner, Fabrizio, was also there. He got surprised that André was there with these two princesses. Fabrizio was so excited that he even sat down for a while with them and invited them some beers for free. André wasn't really into drinking, but he wanted that Masha and Elena have enough fun and feel comfortable. André was always considered and behaved like he used to say, "an avant-garde host".

They went to a supermarket and bought some things to cook in the apartment. It was party time... Absolute fun... Masha and Elena were crazy to see the beach, although it wasn't near, it was like a 3-hour ride.

This was really funny... Fabrizio, who was an old friend of mine, called me that same night saying that he was stunned with the beauty of the two girls that André took to the bar. And that phone call motivated me even more in order to catch the first plane in the morning to Sao Paulo. I thought in making it later during the night, but I had to be there in the morning. I was fucking curious about all this.

Saturday, I arrived at 11 am to the apartment. André was alone, he just walked Masha back to the hotel. We went to pick them up an hour later, he introduced me to the both girls.

Man! I started to deeply understand André about the beauty of the Ukrainian women. Now I was part of that too. And... Yes! These girls were every man's dream. They both radiated such light, such beauty... Simply amazing!

We decided to take these girls to the beach. We went in my car to the coast of Sao Paulo. They were so happy,



now they were able to say that they put their feet on the Atlantic Ocean.

We had lunch in a nice restaurant on our way back. Then we left them in the hotel for a couple of hours.

At 10 pm the four of us went to another nearby bar so they were able to try the famous Brazilian drink called Caipirinha. After one of those drinks they were both laughing and feeling a bit drunk.

I had to catch a plane in the morning. But... Fuck it! This was a once in a lifetime experience. After a second round of Caipirinha we then went to the apartment. We put some music, we ordered a pizza.

Elena was kind of shy at the beginning, but after those drinks she kind of "woke up". We asked them if they wanted to go back to the hotel. They both said that they still wanted to stay there. It was already 2 am.

Masha obviously had a crush on André. After a couple of beers, they were having sex in André's bedroom. Unexpectedly, Elena asked me, in a very funny way, if I wanted to show her my bedroom. Man, right on!

Once inside the bedroom, she started to look through the window and we started to have a chat about the city, the weather. We still had our bottles of beer. Suddenly, she sat on the bed and started to look at me in a very suggestive way. I asked her if she wanted to go sleep to the hotel or sleep on my bed and that I will go to the couch. She laughed and said, "I don't want to sleep tonight.". I got on my knees in front of her and asked her, "What would you like to do? You want to go for a ride?". She grabbed my hands and said, "Noooo... I want to stay with you here...". We started to kiss and... She said, "It's getting hot in here.". She then took her blouse off, then her bra. I stood up and while I was taking my shirt off she

started to unbutton my pants. I started to kiss her breasts, she pushed me aside on the bed, she stood on the bed laughing and took her pants and panties off. I have to admit that I was stunned when I saw her naked in front of me.

During that early morning there was a symphony of moans in my apartment.

Man! These girls were really amazing, they had this sexual vibration and energy... Such a groove... I will never forget that night for the rest of my life. I never fucked before the way I fucked that day with Elena. I came like three times before we finally fell asleep.

It was already 6 am, I had to be at the airport at 8 am. But I was still lying on the bed with this girl on top, shaking her beautiful body and rolling her green eyes.

Wow! What a night and morning... Thanks to André.

I then called a cab, and I left. I almost lost the plane.

Elena slept in my bedroom.

They all woke up like at 1 pm. Two hours later, and after they had breakfast, he took the girls to their hotel.

Around 5 pm he picked them up in the car and went to a very nice shopping center, so they can purchase some souvenirs or whatever they wanted.

I gave Elena my debit card so she can buy anything she wanted, it was a nice way to share something with her, because I wasn't able to be there with them.

They had a meal in the food court of the shopping center.

He then left the two of them for a couple of hours at the hotel. It was their last night in Sao Paulo.

That night Elena decided to stay and rest in the hotel.

Masha and André spent the night in the apartment.

Having fun and enjoying themselves as much as they could.

They woke up at 7 am. They had breakfast together. Suddenly she started to cry... "I don't want to leave, André. I'm already so sad that I won't see you again.". He started to calm her down. She said, while she was crying, "I love you, André.". He said to her, "I love you too, my dear Masha.". It was tough for him too. He really liked her a lot.

A few minutes later they went to the hotel. She already had everything packed, now she had two carry-ons.

They left the hotel at 10 am.

The ride to the airport was like 90 minutes.

They arrived on time, they went to the counter of the airline, they left their stuff.

They still had some extra time. They went to a small lounge and drank something. Masha started to cry again, she really was sad. Her face and the look in her eyes said it all.

They then went to the entrance before they walked in to departure area. André told me how the people looked at her while she was hugging him. Even Elena started to cry, she never saw Masha like that in her entire life, they both knew each other since they were children. Elena had to hugged her while they walked to the departure area. She turned around and said goodbye to him, she barely waved her hand.

André then immediately went back home.

He really felt sad for the way Masha felt, she was such a young lady. But, even if she was so beautiful, so young and empathic, she wasn't really the kind of woman he was looking for.

According to him, she was perfect, but she was too young for him. He really could've been his father, 23 years older than her. Hahahaha...

Besides, he really never stopped thinking about Katerina, and especially about Irina.

What happened with Masha, that experience of meeting her and having sex with her, was really part of playing the role of "Luigi". The main character of the book he was writing.

I could really say that André was in love with Irina. He worshipped her, and he really wanted to stay with her, even if he really preferred going to Ukraine instead of Russia, for several social and economic issues. He thought and perceived that Ukraine was more Western-oriented, more alike with Europe and the US. That country was aspiring to become part of the EU, even if it was still going to take some time until that happened.

And of course, the current economic situation in Ukraine was another bonus point for his plans.

But, he was after the woman of his dreams, and it really didn't matter if she was in Russia or in some other country. Like he said, "I don't think I'll meet any other woman that can dethrone Irina. It's almost impossible. I imagine every day and night if another woman appears and blows my mind... How will she be? How will she look like? I don't think that will happen. I really think in telling Katerina something that she wasn't expecting to listen, but I can't be unfair with her. I have to start thinking in what can I tell her so she forgets about me. And I need to be very elegant, very soft, and avoid telling lies. Besides, my research in CGN and playing the role of "Luigi" is coming to an end. I'm getting tired of it. It's enough, more than enough with what I went through since the past 4 months."

Masha and Elena arrived OK. They kept talking to each other from time to time via Skype. She deleted her

account in CGN, which was good news after all. It took her more than a week to stop crying every time they had a call. It was really tough for her.

One morning Elena sent him a contact request on Skype. She called him, and she started to tell him how sad was Masha, she was her friend for so many years and she never saw her like that. She was struggling with her studies, and she also began to work in a bookstore. Elena wanted to ask him if he was going to Ukraine again, and if he loved Masha. He told Elena, "I really can't tell right now if I'll go back to Ukraine. Yes, I love Masha. But she is also very young, and I think that it would be good for her if she meets a younger man. Time will tell. I think about Masha every day. And thanks, Elena. You really are a good person and a good friend for her, please take care of her.". She then asked him again, with a smile on her face, like being very polite, "But... Do you love her?". He said, "Yes, I love her. I care about her, and I want the best for her too. I want her to be very happy.". They finally ended the call.

It was already the end of May. One more month and I would go back home and spend plenty of time with André, because I was going to have an entire month off. During the last week of May and all the month of June, he kept writing, editing some archives, images, also doing the translations of the other books he had written.

He also spent some time in CGN, but it was less than what he was used to. He had some occasional chats with some girls from Ukraine and Russia. But, it was really the final stage for him in CGN. Sometimes he didn't even log in for 3-4 days in a row.

One night, he decided to have some time away from the translations and editing of his texts. He went online in

CGN. He started to check the homepage for an hour, searching for a nice girl to chat with.

After an hour and a half, he saw a nice new girl. Her smiled and the look in her eyes grabbed his attention, and she was a non-nude "model". He entered her virtual room. They started to chat, her name was Yulia. She was from a small town close to Kherson, but she was currently living in Odessa. She was 23 years old, she had these beautiful blue eyes, and a smile that always touched his heart. They had chats for the next three nights (mornings for her). Her room was always kind of empty, and she told him that she might not last too much in CGN. He really liked spending time with her. He never turned on his camera, until the fifth night together in CGN. It was going to be the first time she was going to see him, and discover with who she was dealing with. I mean, for these girls, if you said you had 40 or 43 years old, you were kind of old and you probably looked very old too. I mean, after what he went through in Ukraine and Russia, people that had his age or even younger than him, really looked like 50 or more if they were next to André. So, that fifth night, after 5 minutes of being in her room, he decided to turn his camera on, just for the sake of it. He will never forget the expression of Yulia once she turned on his camera. She even called a co-worker, because she was working in a "studio". He saw the other girl that was looking at him, and Yulia asked her, "How old do you think he is?". The other girl said, "Hmmm... 25 or 30?". She started to laugh, and he did the same... Yulia finally said to her, "He's 43 years old!!!". Her friend thought it was a joke, she said, "No way... Impossible. Noooooooo... 43? Nooo...". He went for his passport and showed it to them through his

camera. They both looked at each other and remain speechless.

Her co-worker left and they both kept having a chat. She didn't stop saying to him that he looked very good, that he was handsome, and that she liked him a lot. But, her English wasn't really good, she needed help from an online translator, she could barely understand a conversation or talk. But she was sweet, nice and very beautiful. After all, he felt good spending time with her, and she was the only one on his friend list in CGN.

Seriously, during this period he only had one single girl as a "friend", Yulia. And he thought it was more than enough. And he wasn't after virtual sex anymore, so she was the perfect companion during his nights, late nights, and early mornings.

Weeks passed, André's routine was the same, doing the translations, writing, and being online while he was awake between 12 pm and 5 am.

I finally went back home the last week of June, I had a vacation for a month. We spent time having fun, going out, and he even introduced me to Yulia one night.

We also went for some days to a southern city called Florianopolis, we went to visit a friend of ours. We stayed like a week over there.

Two days after we came back to Sao Paulo, André got a message from Katerina, saying that she wanted to talk with him urgently. They had a Skype call that afternoon. At the beginning she was also with her mother. He noticed that something was a bit tense, the look in their eyes weren't the same. Then her mother left, and Katerina wanted to ask him a few things. She suddenly asked him, "Who is Irina?". He answered, "She's a very good friend of mine in Moscow. Why do you ask?". She told him that

one day her mother was curious to know and check the friends André had in VK. Svetlana checked out some of his friends and found out that Irina posted some pictures of her with André when they were at the lake, and also posted a picture she painted of the both of them. In that post she added and wrote that André was the man she always dreamt of having as a couple, that he was his soulmate.

André was kind of away from VK during many weeks, he even didn't read the news of other friends, etc. He really didn't notice that Irina posted that. He immediately checked Irina's page and wall, that pinned-post was from 2 months ago. He also noticed that she wasn't online for several weeks, almost 2 months ago.

Katerina asked him about Irina, "Who is she? Why did she post that?". He explained and told her about the story and experience he went through while he was in Moscow, not with every detail, but he told her almost the complete story, including what he went through with Olga. He also reminded her when he told her even before leaving Ukraine about his "job" in being "Luigi". Katerina seemed quite upset, but calmed. She asked him, "How are your plans going? Will you still come back to Ukraine or will you go back to Russia?". He said, "Well, I will have to decide that once I have the money I'm expecting in my account. Only then I will really start thinking in what will I do.". She asked him again, with a more serious tone in her voice, "Ukraine or Russia?". He said, "Until now, I really think it will be Ukraine.". She asked him, "Do you love Irina? Is she part of your life?". He answered, "Yes, of course I love her. She is a very important person in my life. She is a very good friend and I will always care about her. I love you too, Katerina. But it's not the same feeling,



to be honest.". He added, "You really shouldn't worry about this. I mean, it's OK that your mother wants to protect you and cares about your emotions. Cool... Seriously, it's wonderful. But I didn't even notice about the post she saw. I was and I'm still focused on my stuff. And if I have something to tell you, or if I make any changes in my plans, you'll be the first to know. Right now it's not so easy for me to go through this period either. Unfortunately, I depend on that transaction in order to go back and stay with you. Yes, and we still have to think in how will I remain in your country without having any type of problems. Do you understand? If I don't want to go back to Ukraine, or if I don't want to see you anymore, or have any type of relationship with you, as a couple, I will tell you. And for now, all I can say is that I would really like to go back and be with you.". She didn't smile, she was serious. Like if she wasn't convinced or wasn't what she wanted or needed to hear. He then said, "Do you have any problem with that? What would you like to listen? I'm sorry, I'm being very honest with you. I also think in your feelings and your life too.". She said, "I also wanted to tell you something. I had a meeting with a teacher last week. She told me that there was a nice opportunity for me to study for some months in a British university. And that there was going to be an exam 3-4 months after I attended that course, and if I passed that exam I would be able to get a degree in English from that university. I wanted to ask you... What do you think about that?". He answered, "Well, I think it's great. I think that now is the time for that. It will maybe be a little bit more complicated later.". She still had this serious look in her eyes. She said, "So, you think I should go to England?". He said, "Yes!! Definitely, yes. It would be a huge step for you. It'll be

something you will never regret. It will help you a lot in the future to have a certificate that you did that. Trust me. I think it's a great idea.". She asked him, "And what if things change for me? I mean... What if I want to stay in England more time? What if I don't want to come back to Ukraine? What if I meet another person? Ah? You will also say it's a good idea?". He said, "Katerina, listen to me carefully. I really don't think on what you think. I know why... But, whatever happens, or whatever you decide to do, as long as you feel happy, as long as you feel satisfied with yourself, that will be awesome for me. I repeat, I think on your feelings, ambitions and aspirations, more than on mine. OK?". She said, "Is it that, or it's that you really don't care enough if I change our plans? Maybe you really won't care if I fall in love with another man, right? Because you already have another option called Irina, right?". He started to laugh and smile. He said, "Ohhhh... My dear. Listen to me, again... If you do that, if you fall in love with another man, if you change the plans... I repeat, as long as it's what you really want, and if it makes you feel very good... It'll be OK with me. Simply as that. Because it's your happiness, it's your life. You will fulfill your goals. And that is important for me. Otherwise, if you don't do that it will only bring frustration to your life. Dear, you are still young, I know what I mean with all this. I support you. I support the idea of your personal development over anything else. OK?". She still didn't smile, and finally said, "OK. I understand you. Thanks. I will talk with my teacher about the details. I will think about all this. Maybe in a week I'll have to take a decision and I'll let you know.". He said, "Perfect. And if you want to ask me anything else, please, never hesitate in asking anything you want to know. But... Don't judge me for something that you

doubt or that you really aren't fully aware of the facts or details. Never forget what we talked about that night before I left Ukraine, OK? I was very clear with you. And until now, as I repeat, I will definitely go back to Ukraine. Why Ukraine? Because you are there, and I promised you something, and you are still in my heart and mind. OK?". She finally smiled a bit. She said, "OK. Thank you. Yes, you're right. I remember the conversation we had. Yes, you're right. Sorry, if I made you feel uncomfortable with my questions and my mood. I'm sorry...". He said, "No need to say sorry. It's OK. I repeat, I know why all this happened. But... I still want to achieve the plans you and me made. OK?". She said, "OK. I have to go now, it's a bit late.". He said, "OK, my dear. Take care, please. Sweet dreams. And say good night to your mother.". They ended the call.

After that call, André really thought that the relationship with Katerina was taking a new direction, and not necessarily one with a happy ending. This was the beginning of the end of their relationship. He had the feeling that he finally won't make it with her. Which in one sense, it was good for him. He really liked her, he really loved her too. But... Time will tell.

On the other hand, Irina called him two days later. She was still deeply in love with him. She told him how difficult all this was for her, and that she was only counting the days until his comeback. She told him that once he was back, she wanted to married him, sell her apartment and move to the country house, or perhaps, just maybe, sell the country house and stay in the apartment she had, which wasn't a bad idea after all. Anyway, he really felt that Irina was the one, Thee one...

In the meantime, he was doing time with Yulia. He knew from the start that this girl wasn't really going to mean anything serious for him. But, one night, she told him something that made her jump into a new level of friendship between the two. She asked him if he was going to Ukraine again. He said, "Yes., It's part of my plan.". She asked him if he had any girl waiting for him over there. He said, "Yes, I do. But, we recently had a conversation in which that might not be possible anymore. Maybe she's going to study and live for some years to another country.". Yulia, said, "Ohhhh... Sorry to hear that.". He said, "It's OK, thanks. But things have their own course sometimes, even if you manage them or not. In the end you take it or leave it, or simply you opt for a different circumstance.". She said, "Well... I was thinking something the other day when I was at home. I would like to meet you, if you come to my country.". He said, "Really? Wow! Thanks for the invitation. I would like to meet you too.".

Of course, he was just being a bit polite. But, like he used to say, "Anything can happen, so... Why not?". After all, Yulia was a very beautiful young woman too. But she really wasn't what André needed.

Yulia was really going through a difficult economic situation, though. She had a relationship for several years with the same guy, she was working in a casino before joining CGN. One day she found out that his then boyfriend was cheating on her. She went through a difficult period for some months. She got depressed, she lost her job. She was living with her boyfriend, and she wasn't able to rent a place for herself. She went to her parent's house for some time. She then went back to Odessa for an interview in some sort of wedding or model

agency, and it turned out that it was to work as a cam-girl. She really didn't like the idea, but there was an old friend of her that was already working there for some months. She finally accepted. But her friend was a nude "model" in CGN. Something she really didn't agree with. She was temporary living with another friend of hers, they shared an apartment together. She told him that she was always searching for a better job, but she didn't have any luck. The salary of the other jobs were 50% less than what she earned as a cam-girl. She was also thinking in moving to Kyiv, and she was saving some money for that. It was already August, and I had a new job, a video project for some weeks. I didn't have to go out of the city, but I had to work from 4 am till 11 pm every day, including Sundays.

I used to talk with André every night for a while. He used to tell me the updates of everything he was doing.

One day he had a Skype call with Katerina. She asked him, "André, what do you think if I go study to England from September till June?". He said, "I think it's a very good choice and something awesome for your personal development. I agree. It would be very good for you.". She also said, "I told my mother, but I said to her that it was going to be more expensive than what I thought. She told me that you left some money for me and for my studies when you met with her one day. I wanted to say thank you, André. I was surprised when she told me that, and it will cover everything.". He said, "My dear, thanks to you. I care about your future and your happiness. This experience will be very good for you. I'm fully convinced about that.". She finally said, "I'm still waiting for you, dear. I haven't changed my mind. I really hope we can see each other next year.". He said, "Relax, everything will turn

out the way it should. Besides, whatever happens, even if you decide something different, my friendship will always be opened for you. OK?". They finally said goodbye and ended the call.

They were supposed to have a Skype call once she was in England. She was going to live in a special apartment for foreign students, near the university. She was going to be safe.

The thing with Katerina was going the way he wanted, like he said, "For her own good..."

A week later, Yulia told André that she had an invitation to go and work to another country for some time. She thought it was better than working in CGN, and it was something he totally agreed. She told him that she was saving money for that trip, and it was going to still take a couple of months because she couldn't afford the entire trip and the expenses during the first weeks. He told her, "Dear, if you will still be working doing something that you really don't feel comfortable... Please... I can help you. How much do you need for that trip and for your expenses? So you can leave CGN tomorrow.". She got surprised, and shared with him her Skype so they can talk about this there. Later that day, once she was at home, they had a Skype call. She told him that she needed around 500 dollars, that she already had like 200 that she saved. He said, "Yulia, give me your full name, I'll send you 1000 dollars tomorrow. Don't miss this chance, it might be a very good move for you.". She was shocked, and she gave him her full name.

The day after, he went to a local Western Union office and sent her the money.

A day later she called him by Skype telling her that she got the money. She was deeply grateful with him. That same day she left CGN.

A week later she was already in Vienna, the city where she was going to start working. She was temporarily living in a friend's apartment in that city.

She used to send him video-messages almost every day. She was working in a local casino in Vienna, where her friend also worked. She was earning more money than in CGN. That was good news for André.

It was already late September. André thought that it was time to start thinking in going back to Perú. He had already 6 months in Brazil, and that was the limit he could stay as a tourist. He was aware that he would only have to pay a fine for overstaying, no big deal in the end.

A week later he had a Skype call with Katerina. She was happy, and she already had some friends, and her studies were doing well. She liked England a lot. She also told him that she was going to visit her mother for Christmas and New Year, because they had a break for two weeks.

During the first week of October two major and unexpected incidents happened to André.

The first one... One day he wanted to write Yulia a message on Skype. He suddenly noticed that she removed him from her contacts. He then tried to contact her in VK, and he noticed that she blocked him. He was shocked, from one moment to another Yulia got rid of him. But, why? What happened with her?

Many months later, he found out that she got married and already had a child with a guy from Austria.

Well... Like he said, "Yulia was discarded. No more Yulia, that's for sure.". Although, he really thought that it wasn't really the way he expected to be treated. Especially after

what they talked about, and after he helped her. Right? Anyway, no more comments.

The second incident, and perhaps the one that really affected him a lot. He had a Skype call with Irina one morning. He noticed that she was acting strange, and that she had a different look in her eyes. She then told him that she met a guy from Spain in the institute where she was working, and that they started to go out for some weeks. She finally decided to begin a relationship with him, and that she was going to move to Spain.

Now, this was like a very painful kick in the balls for André. She finally told him that she would still like if they remained as good friends. He had no other choice to accept that as a console.

A few months later, he found out by checking the news in VK, that she posted some pictures of her marriage with this guy. And not only that... A few more months she also posted pictures of herself, but... She was with a big belly... She was pregnant and was going to give birth in some weeks. Fuck!

Yeah, André felt sad enough. He lost one of the most beautiful opportunities to start a new life. He started to think that it was a terrible and huge mistake in leaving Irina. He started to think what would've happened if he never left her. But, like he said, "I deserve all this, it's my Karma... I have to learn from all this, it's all a big fucking lesson. I have to learn from this terrible mistake. I deserve this..."

It really was hard for him. What happened with Yulia was nothing compared to what happened with Irina.

He started to think in other possibilities, in other options, and even new goals appeared for him, goals that had nothing to do with going back to Ukraine or Russia.



But, another major and also unexpected incident happened at the end of that same month.

Yeah... October really became a dark and terrible month for him.

Katerina wrote him a very long message on Skype. He read the message one morning. She told him that she was thinking about the plan that they both had, but that some things changed in her life, and that she was deeply sorry. She told him that she decided to start a relationship with somebody. She had a boyfriend that she liked a lot, and that she was going to stay in England and perhaps marry this guy during next summer. She also asked him to remain as friends, and that she will always be grateful with him. She also told him that her boyfriend knew about him, and that it was OK for him that she still was going to keep André as a good friend.

Like André told me that Sunday morning, "Well buddy, it's all over... I lost two queens in less than a month. The story is over, Max. I'm back to zero... To nothing..."

Two weeks later he decided it was time to go back to Perú.

I felt sad with what happened to him.

I asked him about Masha, if there was any chance to visit her or any chance to start something with her. But, he answered me, "I don't know... You should ask "Luigi" about her, not me..."

André told me that he would never meet Masha again, she wasn't what he wanted. Masha was in a lower level than Katerina or Irina. And he also said, "I'll have to meet somebody, a true queen, a woman that has to be more important and in a higher level than Katerina and Irina together... I seriously think, that won't happen. It's technically impossible. Especially if I have to search in

CGN or VK. Remember that I didn't meet Irina on those websites. So... I'll let you know what I decide once I get my money."

During the third week of November, it was a Wednesday, he finally left Sao Paulo in the afternoon.

He arrived in Lima during that night. He went straight to a hotel.

Thursday morning, and after he had breakfast, he called Franco, his friend that rented him the place where he was living before he went to Ukraine. He said that the place was rented until the end of the month, and that the couple that were living there already confirmed that they were leaving the last day of the month.

He would have to stay in the hotel for one week.

It was OK with him, and a couple of days later he went to visit Franco, and gave him an advance for the next 4 months.

André knew very well that if he was going back to Ukraine it had to be during spring. And if he needed to stay more time in that mini-apartment he would tell Franco about it.

Franco was so happy to see him, they spent that day talking about his experiences over there. André showed him lots of pictures. And he said, "Now the circle is closed. I'm back to the place where it all began, my friend."

A week later he moved in.

He felt funny, but also sad, demotivated, nostalgic, melancholic and a bit strange. Like if he really didn't want to be there. He couldn't stop thinking on Irina.

He didn't even log in to CGN for almost two months.

In December, we only had two Skype calls. I noticed that he was quite down, that he was trying to come back from a sort of depression or sort of mental coma.

He decided to continue with his job concerning the books, he was really about to finish all that very soon.

It was already January 2016, by the end of the month he finished the translations and corrections of his three books. He only had to print them, proofread them once more, and the books would be ready to be registered and published. But, before he was going to search for any publishing house that might be interested, he really wanted to have the fourth book also finished.

He told me that in one month he would finish the last book he was going to write.

It was during the last week of January that one night he decided to log in to CGN. He felt strange, he even forgot the shortcuts of the emotes or gifs that the site had for the chats. He had no "model" in his friend list. He started to check the homepage... But, nothing interesting for him. Nothing!

Nothing grabbed his attention, not a single girl. And the same happened during all that week. He was online for 3-4 hours, and nothing. Not a single chat.

He started to smoke some good weed and spent his time in CGN by reading old chats, remembering the chats with the girls he met there, and reading the ones that he had with the girls he met face to face.

Another week... And... Nothing!

Two weeks already without having one single chat.

A week later, he got a call from his brother. He told him that the property of their father was sold, and that in 3 days they were going to deposit the money on his account. His brother asked him if he wanted to get his part of money by Western Union or if he wanted him to deposit the money directly to his account via a bank transaction. He told him to deposit the money on his

bank account, even if they were going to charge certain fee or tax, but it was safer. André asked him how much was the house sold, his brother said, "In 280,000. I'll transfer to your account 185,000, because I spent in some paperwork and other stuff around like 10,000, so it's 50-50, OK?". André answered, "Perfect! Absolutely fair..."

André instead of feeling great because he finally got his money, he kind of didn't really care. Yes, it made him feel relieved, but he also started to remember the plans he had once he was going to get his money, and even if he wasn't a millionaire, it wasn't just 20 dollars either, right? But he started to think in the possible plans he once had with Katerina, and especially with Irina.

But he suddenly stood up from the chair, he lit a cigarette, and he wrote me a message on Skype saying, "In three days I'll start a new chapter in my life, perhaps the last one... And I need and want a very special woman for this new period in my life. I have 2-3 months to start dealing with somebody, so I can finally go to wherever she is and meet her in person. This somebody has to be more important than the two girls I fell in love with. This new girl has to really blow my mind. Otherwise... If I don't get to know anybody until April, I'll change my plans. And I'll have to forget about meeting somebody through CGN or VK".

This new goal, this new search, began since the day he verified that the money was already in his account.

He started to be online for several hours in both websites. He needed to warm up again, for sure.

Two weeks later, we had a Skype call, he told me, "Nothing, man... Nothing, not a single woman that grabs my attention."

Two more weeks... He told me the same.

We both laughed hard...

I asked him what was he going to do, because his plans were to arrive in May, when it was springtime.

He answered me, "Well, there's only one thing that can stop me from going to Ukraine... And that is if I have to go back to the US. But, I know and feel that won't happen yet. If by the mid-April I haven't meet anybody in VK or CGN that is really worth of meeting in person, I'm thinking in doing a very short trip to Amsterdam and Berlin, just for the sake of it, before I finally arrive to Ukraine. I'll rent a place for some weeks in Kyiv, and find out if I meet somebody while I'm over there. I might also go to Kharkiv, just to remember what happened with Katerina and have fun in my own way. Maybe I'll call and visit Svetlana. Or maybe I'll contact Liza. I really can't tell that now. Maybe I'll go visit other cities too. Maybe I'll even contact Masha or Elena. Time will tell."

It was already the third week of March, and one night he decided to log in to CGN. That day he wasn't able to be online during the day or afternoon, he went out to visit a friend and only came back around 11 pm.

He spent like 15 minutes checking the homepage, focused on the new "models". He started to chat with a couple of them, but... According to him, more of the typical brainless, vain and/or arrogant and stubborn young girls.

It was already past midnight, a couple of more chats... According to him, the same shit. Nothing interesting.

He also started to send some friend requests to some girls in VK. He'll have to wait a couple of days to see if they accepted it or if they simply added him as a follower. Something that André always disliked, "Or you are my

friend or nothing, but no followers please, and I don't follow anybody either.”.

It was already 1 am in Lima, it was 8 am in Ukraine. He wanted to give one more try for that night and check the homepage once more. If there wasn't anybody that grabbed his attention he was going to log out.

He suddenly saw a beautiful girl, a girl that he saw like 1-2 years ago, but he really never had a chat with her. He visited her a couple of times back then, but as a “guest”. He thought this girl was yet another “cool”, “smart ass” girl, with a bad temper. But now she had a new account, and her beauty grabbed his attention. He entered her room, he checked her profile, he remained in silence for a couple of minutes, and right when he was going to say something in her Public Chat she sent him a PM, saying “Hello!”.

They started to chat, she was funny, she started to ask him personal things, the kind of typical stuff, your name, where are you from, what are you doing in CGN, etc. He told her that she saw her twice before, like a couple of years ago. She laughed... Her English wasn't perfect, but she managed it very well to understand, she also told him that she was currently studying English and doing well. She told him that she was from Ukraine, even if on her profile it said Bulgaria. But, André also noticed that she was working in a “studio” where he previously had chats with other girls. But he didn't know exactly in what city this “studio” was. She had certain restrictions, there were several things that she couldn't really tell him, the typical rules for security reasons according to her boss.

After one hour, she asked him if he had webcam. He said, “Yes I do. But... Sorry, I don't have tokens.”. Thinking that maybe she charged for watching webcams. But she said,

"No problem. Don't apologize, I don't charge to watch with who I'm chatting with.". He said, "OK. I'll turn it on right now.".

After a few seconds his webcam was on, and after a few more seconds she finally turned it on.

She suddenly started to laugh and smile, she even blushed, and started to type, "Hey!!!! Wow! You look so young... And very handsome, very cute. I like you!!!!". He replied, "Thanks, maybe you need glasses? Hahahaha...". She started to laugh again and said, "No!!!!!! I don't need glasses. I like your smile a lot, I like your face, it makes me feel happy.". He replied, "OK... Thanks. It's a real pleasure for me to chat with you...".

The name that this girl used in CGN was "Alina". She told him that she really couldn't tell him her real name, at least not for now. He understood, but he was always against these type of restrictions, it was an obstacle for his goals, and for getting to know the "model". But, he tolerated this for now.

They spent that night/early morning chatting until 6 am. He told her about all the experiences he went through since a year ago. She asked him, "Do you have plans in coming back to Ukraine?". He answered, "Yes. That's my goal. I would like to arrive there in May. And I'm looking forward to stay for some time, like 2-3 years, maybe even more.". She asked him, "Why would you like to stay for so long?". He replied, "Because I like your country, but it will also depend on who I meet. Maybe I meet a girl that falls in love with me, and I will marry her and stay there till I die. Hahahaha.". She smiled and blushed, she said, "Wow! You will stay in this country because of love? And only for a woman?". He replied, "Yes, I would do that.". She said, "Sounds so romantic, and so unreal... Like a dream...". He

said, "Well, it's my dream, and I hope I find somebody that has the same dream...". She smiled, she blushed and laughed. She was so expressive, so cute, her facial gestures captured and enchanted André. He started to feel very attracted to her. She said, "Well... I think you can find a girl with the same dream. Maybe you already found her here in CGN?". He replied, "Well... I only have one friend here in CGN.". She asked him, "Ohhhh... Where is she from?". He said, "From Ukraine.". She suddenly changed the look in her eyes, like she started to feel upset or disappointed, and she asked him, "Ohhhh... From what city? For how long do you know her? Will you meet her in person?". He replied, "I still don't know in what city is she. I just met her today. She told me that her name is "Alina". And I like her a lot... She is very beautiful, inside and out. Her smile conquered my heart immediately...". She started to blush and laugh, she suddenly turned off her cam, and wrote him, "Oh my god! Sorry... Be right back in 30 minutes... Wait for me, please. Don't leave". He replied, "OK. Sure. I'll wait."

She came back after 30 minutes. She asked him to turn on his webcam again. She said, "It's hard to believe that I'm the only girl in CGN that you have as a friend.". He then said, "Look!". And he grabbed his camera and showed her the window of his friend list. He said, "Now you believe me? Listen "Alina", I'm smart, I don't need to lie or hide anything about myself, especially with the people I like. I don't like lies, I don't like people that needs to lie or cheat on other people. I think those people are weak and have mental issues. I like to be crystal clear. OK?". She said, "OK. That's good. I'm like you then. I hate lies. But in this website I have to lie sometimes, for my own good.". He replied, "I understand you very well. I



actually consider this website like hell or like a mental institution, or a circus, or a freak show... Full of liars and wicked people... Hahahaha... With few exceptions, of course, like you. I respect you a lot, and I don't see you as a sexual object either."

And like if she suddenly felt something deep inside her, deep within her feelings, her emotions, and according to what André witnessed, the look in her eyes changed, it was like if a light inside her started to emit sparks... Sparks of love... He noticed that by the way she now started to stare at him. It wasn't so difficult for him to notice that after all the experiences he had before.

He then said, "Dear, unfortunately I have to sleep for a while, it's 7:30 am here.". She replied, "Oh my god! Yes, please. I thought that you had a light on, but it's daytime... Hahahaha... Yes... I'll be online tomorrow. I hope to see you again.". He said, "Yes. I'll be online too. Thanks for everything. A real honor in meeting you. Take care, have a nice day. Poka-Poka.". She replied, "For me too. Sleep well. Poka-Poka.".

He logged out and went to sleep.

He woke up at 2 pm. He did his usual stuff, like every day. He logged in CGN at 1 am. "Alina" was online. They started to chat. She asked him to turn on his camera. They spent 4-5 hours together, chatting about her, about him, she asked him many things. She told him that she worked only from Monday thru Friday.

For the next three days it was the same, they both spent their time together knowing each other better.

On Friday, he decided to test her. If she was really interested on him she had to contact him outside CGN. Once they were chatting and he had his camera on, he suddenly wrote her, "Look...". And he grabbed his camera

and showed her the screen of his laptop, he wrote like a text in a document, with big fonts, he shared his personal information, he wrote his name and the nicknames of his accounts in VK and Skype. He noticed that she was kind of surprised and at the same time like if she memorized what she read. She then wrote him a message, "OK. Nice place.". He then thought that she was smart enough. That Friday he stayed with her in CGN until 8 am, when she left.

He went to sleep and woke up at 2 pm.

Once he turned on his laptop he noticed that he had a friend request in VK and also on Skype. It was "Alina". But she wasn't online at that time.

He noticed that her real name was Anna, she had 24 years old, her birthday was also in April, only one week before his birthday. She lived in a small city called Kremenchuk. Suddenly, he got a message from her in VK, she wrote, "Hello André... Now you know everything! Hahahaha... Please, you are the only one in CGN that knows all this. Never share this with anybody, please. OK? I feel that I can trust in you.". He answered her, "Hello Anna, thanks. Of course, you don't even have to say that. I would never share this with anybody.". She wrote, "I like your profile, I saw many nice pictures. I will check it tomorrow again, OK? I live in Kremenchuk, but I work in Dnipropetrovsk. Every day in the afternoon I take a bus to come back and every morning I do the same, with the exception of weekends. We will chat tomorrow, OK? I'm very tired now, I'm already in bed about to sleep.". He replied, "Yes, my dear. Please, rest. Sweet dreams. Once again, thank you very much. Poka-Poka.". She replied, "Poka-Poka.".

On Saturday, at 4 am, he got a message from Anna in VK saying, "Hello, how are you? Are you busy?". He replied,

"Hello, good morning Anna. No, I was only waiting if you were going to be online.". She wrote, "It's a bit late over there, right?". He wrote, "Well, I'm used to this schedule, no problem, it's 4 am here.". She wrote, "At what time will you go to sleep?". He replied, "Well, honestly, it depends on what you will tell me.". She said, "OK. I will have breakfast and take a shower. If you want we can talk on Skype in 90 minutes. Or it's too late for you?". He said, "It's perfect, dear.". She wrote, "OK, I'll be back. Thanks. I really want to see you...".

He was very excited, he needed to know if she really was there one...

It was 6 am, and he got a message from Anna on Skype saying, "Are you ready?". He replied, "Yes! Please, call me." She then called him.

André was speechless, she was with her wet hair, no make-up, smiling, and she even blushed a bit, she had these beautiful and hypnotizing blue-greenish eyes. She said, "Well... This is me...". He said, "I'm impressed, you even look more beautiful than in CGN.". She blushed again and did that gesture like being shy and embarrassed. She said, "So? What plans do you have for today?". He replied, "Well, after we finish the call I'll need to sleep for a while. Then, nothing really. No plans. And you?". She said, "Once I finish talking with you I'll go to the supermarket, buy things for the entire week. Then cook something, rest and... If you are free, I would like to see you again and talk for a while.". He said, "OK. Sounds good.". He asked her, "Is that your place? You live alone?". She told him the entire story of her life and circumstance. She was only child. That apartment was from her parents, they bought it like 10 years ago, when it was new. Two years later her father died from a disease. Her parents

also owned a small house in the country side, in a village. Her mother lived there with her sister, Anna's aunt. The village was not far away, like an hour in a mini-bus. Anna visited her mother every Sunday, she stays in that house during the morning and part of the afternoon. Then she comes back and the same routine during the week, an early morning 3 hour ride to Dnipropetrovsk. The apartment was legally hers. She showed him the view. She was on the last floor of a 9 floor building. It was a very nice apartment for her alone. She told him that she was really a home girl, she really didn't like to go out too much. She had only two good friends in Kremenchuk. Since she was working in CGN her lifestyle became very monotonous, but she got used to it over the years. She told him that she really was tired of working in CGN, but with that job she was able to save money for her future. She wanted to travel to other cities in her country, visit other countries too. She only had one boyfriend in her life, they were together like for 2-3 years, until he moved to Kyiv and then married another girl. She then decided to work in CGN. Since then, she didn't have any other serious relationship. During her spare time, she visited her mother or she simply listened to music or cook fancy dishes, she had a diploma as a chef. Finally, she said, "Once again, this is me... André... A simple and quite boring girl... Hahahaha... I don't like to go to parties. I don't like to drink or go dancing. I really prefer to avoid places that are full of people...". She laughed and smiled at him. She added, "Are you disappointed?". He said, "No, dear. On the contrary, I think I just fell in love with you... I think you are the type of woman I was always looking for...". She opened her beautiful eyes, she blushed, she smiled, and said, "Wow! Sounds like a declaration of

love... Please, don't joke with that... I think you already noticed that I'm a bit sensitive with everything concerning love, right?". He said, "Anna... I'm not joking. I can't believe I met you... I would share the rest of my life with you, and I will never stop loving you till my last breath.". And it was since this moment that she suddenly had like a deep and touching feeling towards him. She remained in silence for some seconds, she was like in a sort of trance. She then smiled and said, "Wow! André... I never heard or felt something like this in my life. Are you telling me that you would like to marry me and start a family with me?". He said, "Yes!". She laughed and said, "Are you serious? You only know me for some days...". He said, "Dear, I'm not a teenager, remember? I know what I want, I know what I need. I know with who I want to share the rest of my life and all my time. And it's you...". She blushed so much that she even felt hot, her face was red. She was really impressed. He really took her breath away... She said, "But... But... Oh my god... I feel that I want to say the same to you... Hahahaha... But... When will you come here and meet me?". He said, "As soon as possible, in less than a month. And I want you to do me, and do yourself, and do us, a big favor... A very important favor for our future... I wanted to ask you to stop working in CGN. I want you to call your boss and say that you can't work there anymore. I know that there is no contract. And I know that they really don't depend on you. So, I know that you can simply call them today. And you'll be free from now on. I will send you the enough money so you won't have to worry about anything. I'll send you the money on Monday, so on Tuesday you can go pick it up. Deal? Please, say yes... If your heart feels what I feel, and if your mind trusts in the man that you will love.". She

looked at him in silence, like if she was enchanted... And she finally said, "OK. Yes, I will call my boss after our call.". The look she had in her eyes during that moment was crucial for André.

Unexpectedly, he was watching the woman that dethroned and erased from his mind any other women he ever met in his life before.

They stayed for some seconds staring at each other in silence. Then he said, "If you feel the same as I do... Since today, a new period in your life, and in my life, just began. If you really feel something like that... I feel the same... And from today, together we will start a new life together...". She smiled, and said, "I feel you are the man I always dreamt of...".

After a while they ended the call. He then went to sleep. She called her boss and quit her job, she would never have to work there again.

When he woke up he started to search for tickets. They both had another long Skype call when she came back. They also had another long call once she came back from her mother's house on Sunday night.

On Monday, he would send her the enough money for two months. He also sent money to the travel agency in Ukraine, to get the legal invitation letter that he would need to show at the embassy in Lima, together with other documents.

During this short period, André and Anna spent hours every day and night seeing and talking to each other through Skype. They coordinated the trip and where they were going to meet.

In less than a month André would put his feet on Ukrainian ground again. He felt so fortunate. Right on!

## One More Time...

And the day finally arrived...

It was early morning, Sunday the 17<sup>th</sup> of April. He was at the airport in Lima waiting for his flight to take off.

He would first go to Madrid, Spain. There he would have to wait two hours and catch a flight to Kyiv via Munich, Germany.

He arrived in Kyiv during the afternoon of the 18<sup>th</sup> of April, two days before Anna's birthday.

He booked a cool apartment for two weeks in a nice district in Kyiv. This apartment was in the 22<sup>nd</sup> floor in Urlivska street, with a view towards the west, towards the Dnieper river.

Anna would catch a mini-bus from Kremenchuk to Kyiv the morning after. She already had the address, and they would meet face to face in the entrance of the building.

André hired a tour guide/translator to pick him up at the airport, also to help him in dealing with the manager of the apartment, because that guy didn't speak English. This guide also helped him in buying a chip for his phone. Once he purchased the necessary stuff at the supermarket, that was only a few blocks away from the apartment, he paid the guide and then she left.

He cooked and then ate something. He took a shower, and then called Anna from his cellphone. She was so excited because he was only five hours away from her.

That night (Ukrainian time) we also had a Skype call.

Then he went to sleep.

Anna was supposed to arrive at 1 pm approximately.

Tuesday morning, he woke up at 8. He was ready and waiting for Anna's call since 12 pm.

At 12:30 pm he got a phone call from Anna, she was in a cab a few blocks away from the apartment.

He went down to the main entrance.

After 10 minutes a cab appeared... He saw Anna coming out of the car, with a very small bag. She turned around and saw André standing in the entrance of the building, she started to walk faster towards him. She looked straight into his eyes with a smile on her face and tears of joy in her eyes. They hugged for several minutes, while she was laughing, and saying, "Oh my god... Oh my god... This is the happiest day of my life... I feel it."

He then invited her to go to the apartment. She was nervous, but at the same time very happy.

When they were in the elevator she didn't stop staring at him with a big smile on her face.

Once inside the apartment, he asked her to put herself comfortable. He offered her something to drink. They sat down on the kitchen table. He started to ask her how was the trip. She asked him every detail of his trip. They went to the balcony, they smoked a cigarette together contemplating the view.

He asked her if she wanted to go to a supermarket and buy things that she wanted, or that perhaps she needed to cook.

30 minutes later they went walking to the supermarket. They had fun while they were there. She looked so happy about everything. They both agreed in buying a bottle of champagne to celebrate this special occasion.

He noticed that she was a well-educated and fine young lady, by her manners, by the way she talked and dealt with other people. Besides, she radiated a tremendous



vibe, she was so beautiful and grabbed the attention of everybody. And she wasn't so tall, in fact she was kind of short, like 1.60 meters. Such a cute girl, with a perfect thin and firm body.

They walked to the apartment, and she put herself comfortable with light clothes on, a top and shorts, and remained barefoot. She wanted to cook something special, and she said, "It's one of the most important moments in my life, I know it. This day will remain in my memory forever. I feel that my dream came true."

They put the bottle of champagne in the fridge for some minutes. André couldn't avoid staring at her beautiful body, from head to toes, she was so perfect. He still couldn't believe that he was there with Anna. Once she finished cooking, she went to take a shower.

They went to the balcony to smoke a cigarette, then they opened the bottle of champagne.

They started to talk about everything that happened since they met in CGN. He also told her about the experience he went through a year earlier. She told him about her life before meeting him in CGN.

They were already feeling the effects of the champagne. It was already their fourth glass. They made a toast, "For our future together... Cheers!".

They hugged, they started to kiss, he noticed that she was already determined to take a step forward, her eyes told him that. He started to kiss her on the back of her neck. She then said, "Let's go to the bedroom...". She grabbed his hand and started to walk towards the bedroom.

As soon as they were next to the bed she took her top and her bra off. He started to kiss her breasts. He took his clothes off. She whispered to his ear, "I love you, André...". He suddenly told her to stand up on the bed, he took her

shorts and panties off, then told her to lay down. He started to kiss and lick her beautiful and perfect toes and feet, her legs and thighs. He opened and spread her legs and started to lick her pussy for several minutes. André was a pussy licker par excellence. She was so wet, she curled her toes and wiggled her body, he saw how she pulled the sheets with her fingernails, and the way how she pulled his hair. She barely moaned in such delicate way. Her stunning blue-green eyes were like a burning fire, she was glowing, and she had this look in her eyes that he didn't see before. She told him to lay down on his back, she sat on top of him and started to move very softly, while he grabbed and kissed her breasts, he saw the way she started to roll her eyes back and even drooled, and he felt how she tightened her pussy with his cock inside her. She then said, "I didn't imagine I was going to cum so many times. I feel like in heaven... I want to see you cum, please.". But he first grabbed her and told her to stay on her knees and bend over, in doggy style. Before he was going to put his cock inside her he started to lick her beautiful and pink asshole. He enjoyed her so much, the way her ass was moving back and forth. He was already feeling the tickles all over his spine and balls. He asked her, "Where do you want me to cum?". She turned around, got on her knees, and said, "Here, on my breasts...". She said, "Wow! Mmmmm... You're sweet as honey... Like condensed milk...". They both started to laugh. She then started to kiss him, like desperately... She said, "You are making me feel like the happiest woman in the entire universe, I'm serious... I feel like... Like... I can't even use words to describe all this...". She started to kiss his neck, his chest and belly. He said, "Let's go take a shower...". They both when to take a shower.

Right after, they had dinner and drank some white wine. They went to the balcony again, they smoked a couple of cigarettes. They also ate a piece of cake that she bought. They then went to the bedroom and sat on the couch, listening to music and talking about their plans together. And this was just the beginning of wonderful experience for the both of them. A very special relationship full of harmony, understanding, happiness and love. They cared for one another like perhaps any other couple in the world would. It was like a fairy tale for both of them. According to André it was even more intense and magical compared to the relationship he had with Irina.

Anna was now on the throne. She was now André's queen, and not only that... She was his goddess. He worshipped her so much that she really felt it. She was totally in love, totally focused on him. She also worshipped him like a king, or even like some kind of archangel or god. They had an enormous respect for each other.

That night they slept hugging to each other. He told her before she fell asleep, "Tomorrow is our day off, OK?". She agreed and said, "We deserve it... And it will be the best birthday I'll have in my life."

They both woke up like at noon, and while she was still in bed her mother called her.

They both went to the kitchen, they had a very nice breakfast, she also made some pancakes. Then they smoked a cigarette with a cup of milk and coffee.

After they took a shower, they started to talk about their plans and make a schedule for the rest of the week.

They were going to stay two weeks in that place, so there was no rush. Then they would go to her place in Kremenchuk.

While they were in Kyiv they both wanted to go out and get to know the city and its main attractions. They also wanted to gather information about how was the process of getting married. Anna was very sure about doing that, she told him that if it depended on her, she would've get married that same morning. She was really sure of what she wanted, no doubt. She was very determined, even if she was so young.

Once they had that information, which was their priority, they would continue with the rest of the plan and the options they were both thinking for their future.

They spent their time together visiting the city center, the main streets and avenues, parks, museums, shopping centers and restaurants.

They also had several walks around the neighborhood where they were living.

On Monday, they went to the main office where they would get the information in order to get married. They told them that they can also marry in Kremenchuk. The process according to the Ukrainian laws was:

Once they got married, André would have to go back to his country, with the documentation that he was married with a Ukrainian citizen. In his country he would have to go to the Ukrainian embassy and ask for a different type of visa, one that would allow him to stay for more time. He would have to go back to Ukraine and start a process in order to get a permission to stay there as a temporary resident. After a determined time, he would have to start the process in order to get a permanent resident status. Only then he would be able to work in Ukraine or start his own business. After a couple of years, he could start the process of becoming a Ukrainian citizen.

After the both of them had all this information they agreed that they would marry in Kremenchuk as soon as they got there.

They still had one more week in Kyiv, they had to leave the apartment next Monday.

She cooked for him on his birthday. They also had a Skype call with his mother that evening. She was speechless when she saw Anna. His mother told him, "She's so beautiful... I never saw such beautiful woman before...".

Besides spending their time in the apartment, and enjoying themselves like angels in love, they decided to travel to a couple of other cities before they were going to Kremenchuk.

They decided to visit a very famous park called Sofiyivska, located in a small city or town called Uman. It was a one-day trip. They left at 7 am and arrived there at 11 am. They spent the day and the afternoon in that park. It was the first time she also visited that place. At 6 pm they took a mini-bus back to Kyiv. They arrived at the apartment at 10 pm. They had dinner and watched a movie.

On Friday they went to visit a city called Zhytomyr, another one-day trip, and just for the sake of it.

They really wanted to visit the city of Lviv and other cities near the Carpathians, but they decided to do that in summer, because it was going to take more days, perhaps even weeks to visit all that region.

On Saturday and Sunday, they decided to spend their time in the city center of Kyiv again.

On Monday they left the apartment of Urlivska street and went towards Kremenchuk.

They were going to take a bus or a mini-bus, but he decided to hire a cab for that, it was faster and more comfortable.

They arrived at 4-5 pm. They went straight to her place. André liked it a lot. He liked the neighborhood too.

She was nervous at the beginning, but once she noticed that he felt comfortable and that he liked the place, she felt happy enough.

Her apartment was located in a sort of neighborhood or residential area called Kvartal 278. Her apartment was very big, and it was on the last floor. It had two balconies, the view of the balcony on the bedroom was towards East/Southeast, it was near a sort of rural area.

They left their stuff and went to buy some things at the local supermarket that was only 2 blocks away from the apartment, located on the main avenue called Lesi Ukrainsky.

Then she started to cook something and they decided to take a shower and rest.

On Tuesday morning, she went to visit her mother on a nearby village, like 45 minutes away in bus. She needed to tell her everything. Her mother was amazed and very happy for her. She told her that in a couple of days she was going to visit her with André.

While she was away that day, André and I had a very long Skype call, we didn't talk since he was in Lima. He told me about the plans they both had.

On Wednesday morning, they both went to the office where they were supposed to marry. They chose a date, it was going to be on a Saturday, the 14<sup>th</sup> of May. Then they went to choose the wedding rings. She didn't want to wear any wedding dress. She really wasn't into that. He agreed with her and thought it was OK. Besides, like they

said, it wasn't necessary to marry to prove all the love they had for each other. They were really doing it so they could remain together in her country, and so he also avoided any type of problem. It was more for legal issues that they were getting married. But it was fun, they both enjoyed all this a lot.

On Friday, she took him to the village where her mother lived. Her mother's name was Valentina, and she was a very nice lady, only a couple of years older than André. But, like it was already a sort of common experience, she looked like if she was 10-15 years older than him. She even thought he was 30 years old. They spent almost all day at her place, she really didn't speak English, just a few words. It was funny for him to see Anna as a translator. Her mother's sister was also there, and she was a bit older. The house was very nice, it had a big vegetable garden, with some trees, and it had a nice view to the countryside and plains, so typical in Ukraine. Her mother was very happy to meet André. She knew and felt that her daughter was in good hands.

On Saturday, they went to pick up the wedding rings. Anna was so excited.

They then went to have lunch at a local Italian restaurant, kind of a fast-food restaurant. They went back to the apartment.

According to him, the city and everything else was OK. He was able to find everything that he needed. But, there wasn't too many people that spoke English.

That day Anna told him that her mother also had a small apartment in the city center, that it belonged to her parents, but it was always rented, and that's how her mother and her sister had an extra income. She told him that her mother and sister agreed to put it under Anna's

name, so it was legally Anna's apartment. She also told him that her father owned a small building in the center of Kremenchuk, but she and her mother decided to sell it two years ago, and put that money in a bank.

On Sunday, they went to a big supermarket called Fozzy, it had many imported stuff, he bought several things for the both of them.

During the week they spent their time in the apartment, they went out a couple of times.

We also had a Skype call, it was the first time I talked with Anna. Yeah, she was definitely André's soulmate. She really was stunning, any man's dream, and she was very empathetic and very friendly too. She was sweeter than a candy.

The great day arrived... Saturday.

They got married at noon, in a special place the civil registration office had for those type of events. They both signed documents, pictures here and pictures there. Her mother was there too. She invited an old friend she had from school days, as a second witness.

After the wedding took place, the four of them went to have some drinks and lunch at a very nice restaurant nearby, in the city center.

Around 6 pm they called a cab that will take her mother back home.

Anna and André went back to their place. She was really happy.

We had a Skype call that night. It was funny to see him wearing a wedding ring.

OK... What was the next step? And now what?

They decided that the two of them would go to Lima for a couple of weeks, which was the time that took the



embassy to give him a new type of visa. They had to do that trip as soon as possible.

They went to the airport a week after they got married.

It was the first time that Anna was going to travel abroad, and the first time she was going to catch a plane too. She was a bit nervous. But with André next to her, like she said, "I feel more than safe. I know that he loves me and he will always protect me from anything."

They took a flight from Kyiv to Madrid, they were going to stay for some hours in a nearby hotel, very close to the airport. Then they would catch the flight to Lima.

They arrived in Lima on a Friday afternoon.

They went to the hotel where he always used to stay.

He warned Anna about many things concerning his country and the city. He really didn't want her to come with him. But she wanted to do it because it was part of her beloved man, about his past, the city where he lived and all that. It was important for her.

On Monday, they went to the Ukrainian embassy and he dropped all the documents that they asked him.

In one week he had to pick up his passport with the new visa. The guy in charge was happy to talk with Anna. The parents of this guy were also from Kremenchuk. That guy was very friendly, and the normal process usually took 10-15 days. But thanks that Anna was there he promised to make it in a week. Good for them.

At this point of their relationship, Anna was aware of everything about André and his past.

He took her to see the place where he lived, also where he had his music store. He took her to a couple of places where she could feel comfortable and enjoy the moment. She was so surprised to see the ocean, they took a cab down to the beaches in Miraflores, and like she said, "At

least let me touch the water with my hands.”. It was almost winter in Lima, so the weather wasn’t what she kind of expected. Of course, it wasn’t cold for her either. She was having a good time.

During that last week, and after they gave him his passport with the new visa, they visited a couple of André’s friend. They visited Franco, and went to the third floor, that wasn’t occupied yet. She felt so excited to see the place where she met him for the first time through a webcam.

And like Franco and the other friend they visited, the reaction was always the same, everybody remained speechless when they first saw her. Everybody thought she was an angel that came down from heaven or something like that. Her beauty left everybody hypnotized for some seconds, or even minutes. It didn’t matter if they were men or women, like the reception girls on the hotel, for example. Everywhere they went, whether it was to the supermarket, to the restaurant or shopping center, everybody had to stare at her, like if she was the goddess of universal beauty. I mean it... Everybody!!!

And like Franco said to him, “You really made it, man. You are The Man...”.

She asked him one last place she wanted to visit, and this proved how interested she was in André’s past. She wanted to visit the graveyard of André’s father. He said, “OK. The last time I was there was when they buried him.”.

One afternoon they went to the cemetery.

Two days later, they were on the flight back to Ukraine, with a stop in Madrid. This time they only had to wait two hours in the airport.

But, André had a little surprised for Anna... He told her, "We aren't go to Kyiv yet, we are going to Amsterdam for 4 days, and then we will go to Prague for 3 days."

She started to laugh, she hugged him so tight. Amsterdam and Prague were two cities that Anna always dreamt in visiting. He said, "This will be like a gift for your birthday and it will be like our honey moon..."

A week later they arrived during the afternoon at Kyiv's airport. They then took a cab to Kremenchuk.

Once they arrived home she said to him, "I'm the happiest woman on Earth, André. I love you so much." He said to her, "I will love you forever, Anna. And if there is an afterlife I will also love you, and choose you as my eternal companion... With you, every day is like an everlasting honey moon."

The next plan they had was one more trip together, they went to visit Lviv and took a tour for a week to the Carpathians.

Once they got back to Kremenchuk, they would remain one week inside the apartment. They decided to not go out for an entire week, so they bought all the necessary stuff.

For sure they had lots of fun during that week.

They also talked about their future plans.

He wanted to buy a nice apartment, whether it was in Kremenchuk or in a bigger city. He had the idea of renting it to foreigners. He also wanted to print his books, start a sort of publishing house and build a website in order to share and offer his books. He also wanted to translate two of the books to Russian. He talked with Anna if she was interested in some sort of business, or what would she really like to do. She was interested in having a nice café or small restaurant. They also talked if they would stay in

Kremenchuk or move to another city. But both of them agreed in staying there. Besides she was close to her mother, that made her feel good, and that was enough to stay there.

She asked him if it was a good idea to have children, or if it was better to wait some time. He said that she was still young, that there wasn't any rush to have children. He also talked with her about this reproduction subject. He explained to her that it really wasn't necessary, and it was just a way to satisfy certain selfish complex that mankind had in order to preserve their own species, that it was more linked to certain animal aspect within humans, and that they really don't realize the consequences and side effects of overpopulation and other social and psychological issues. She started to evaluate this topic. Of course, she was a woman, and women feel that natural need of reproduction more than men. He also told her about certain new philosophical movements concerning reproduction, and perhaps it was really better to not procreate, and instead to become child-free. He finally told her that whatever her decision or conclusion was, he would support her. But that it was a good idea for her to really be aware and conscious enough about that topic before taking a decision. He told her that if she really wanted to have children he would agree with her, and if she didn't want to have children, he would also agree with her. But his main intention was to make her realize every aspect of having children. He told her to ask herself, "What's the point to have children? Why? If we really feel a bit sad when a beloved one or a very close person dies, or if we don't fully agree with the several genetic failures or deficiencies of our species and the way this life ends, why do we keep feeding this existence? Or is it that we

feel the need to have children like having pets? And then what?". At the beginning she was a little bit confused, basically because of her age and that typical social pressure we are all programmed to follow. But once she started to read about these points of view or philosophies, and discuss with him about this topic, she started to think in the possibility of not having children. After all, she really felt that he was telling her all this just to increase her own level of consciousness step by step. He also said to her, "Dear, and even if after all this information you still want to have children... You still have lots of time to decide. But first focus on your individual goals, your personal achievements. Remember, once you decide to have children your time and your life aren't yours anymore. They fully belong to your children, at least until they grow up.". She said, "Yes. I think what you're saying is correct, it makes sense. We can talk about this topic several times, and in the future we will take a decision.".

No doubt that this is still a delicate subject for many people, because it really makes certain changes on the way how they'll perceive this existence called life. But it must be discussed in order to not just bring children as mere pets into a world or society like the ones we live in nowadays. Right?

For now, Anna and André had many things to do and achieve together. And like he finally said, "The thing is to feel good and happy enough with your achievements and what you do every day. If you feel or think that something is missing, the best thing you can do is talk about it with somebody that fully understands you, OK?". She said, "Yes. And I'm so fortunate to have that person always by

my side...". She then hugged him tightly and said, "I love you.". He said to her, "I love you too..".

He also talked with her about the possibility of going to the US. There was still a pending process for him in order to obtain the US residency. He would have to decide if he takes it or leaves it, or to cancel it. She said that it was not a bad idea for the two of them. Because maybe in the future it was better to move over there. He said, "Time will tell... Now, let's just enjoy our lives together and make our plans here. Deal?". She said, "Deal!", and sighed while she looked into his eyes.

They always did everything together. It was a natural feeling for both of them. She always wanted to go everywhere with him. He always wanted to be next to her. Weeks later, he found a very nice apartment he wanted to see. She called the owner and made an appointment. This apartment was in Kyiv, very close to where they spent their first two weeks together.

Three days later they took a mini-bus and went to see the place. They both liked it a lot. It was perfect to rent it during the first years. And like he said, "Who knows, maybe in the future we can also live here for some time, or simply have it available when we want to come to Kyiv.". She totally agreed with him. They ended up buying it.

15 days later there was a wealthy British citizen that worked at the British embassy in Kyiv. He wanted to rent it for three years. Perfect! So they didn't have to worry about this for a long time.

It was already March 2017. He already had his books translated and printed in two languages. He also had his website available. The books were being sold through the website. He really didn't expect to make a serious income

with them, but several copies were sold, especially the book about music.

He also had an invitation for a book launch in Moscow and Saint Petersburg. André and Anna went together, they had lots of fun for a week.

In April they decided to spend some days in Kyiv. They rented the same apartment where they met a year ago. They celebrated the first anniversary of their meeting in the same place where they met for the first time.

Everything was going well for the both of them.

He also started to purchase some sound equipment in order to achieve one of his long time ambitions, the music projects. He used to record Anna's vocals for some of the songs he had in mind. Although, all this would really be completed some years later. It was personal for him, so he didn't have any kind of rush.

Two years later, in May 2019, they were going to do a special party for their third anniversary.

They invited me and my girlfriend to visit them and stay for a couple of weeks.

They picked us up at the airport and the four of us stayed for some days in the same apartment in Kyiv where they first met. Then we went to Kremenchuk and stayed at their place.

It was during this time that André told me that he wasn't really going to publish the book about all his experience since he got involved with CGN. But I asked him to showed me the draft, and I thought it was a nice book, a nice story after all. I also asked him if he didn't mind if I wrote a new version, a new book about all this, and that before I decided to publish it I would ask for his approval. He agreed and thought it was a good idea. "As soon as I get back to Sao Paulo I would start writing it. I'm going

to have like a vacation for three months. I will have plenty of time to read your book and I'll do my best in adding or editing under a sort of witness-like or neutral perspective of the whole story.", I said to him while we were smoking and contemplating the view from one of the balconies.

I was so happy to see him again. Meeting Anna in person was also something like out of this world. Even my girlfriend didn't stop telling me how beautiful she was.

It was the day of the party, André and Anna's third anniversary. It was going to take place at the country house, where Anna's mother lived. There was like 10-15 people invited. Nice people, everybody was very friendly with us. Some of them spoke English.

We had lots of fun, we even danced all of us together in the garden. André and Anna gave a small speech to everybody that was there. They told us how in love they were. It was so funny to hear Anna translating what he said. After their speech they walked to a lonesome nearby tree and kissed for several minutes. While all of us were clapping our hands, like celebrating their love.

We then noticed in the distance that they were whispering to each other's ear...

Anna asked him, "Do you still love me?". He said, "I will never stop loving you, Anna. Never."

He also asked her, "What about you? Do you really love me?". She said, "I love you more than what I love myself. I am so happy, thanks to you. Thanks to you, I have my wings back and I'm permanently in heaven when I'm with you."

They both started to walk towards where we all were. They were hugging each other.



Then they started to express their gratitude to each and every one that was there in the party.

It was already twilight, some people already left. My girlfriend and Anna were drinking some tea and talking sitting in a bench near the vegetable garden.

André asked me to go for a walk to a nearby hill. It was like a 15-minute walk. There were these big stones with some trees in between them. We were able to sit down and contemplate the view.

It was a Full Moon and starry night.

I lit the last joint I had, from a very high-class Indica I bought in Amsterdam, on a one-day stop before arriving to Ukraine.

We sat and contemplated the landscape, we were able to see behind us the house where the party took place. We only smoked a couple of hits, it was more than enough.

We started to talk about how everything turned out for us over the years. We started to laugh and remember our time together in the music store, in the heights of the Andes, our experiences with psychedelics, the mental sessions we had together. We started to talk about the time when he took me to a very lonesome place in the heights and we decided to stay for some days in this sort of cavern that had three entrances. We decided to take some "magic" mushrooms while we were camping inside the cavern. We did a sort of ritual-like psychedelic session, with certain type of music and certain information about the process of dying. Hahahaha... We had a very deep and life-changing mental journey indeed. We remember how the light of the Full Moon entered the three entrances of the cave. "What a trip, ah?", he remembered. I said, "Yeah, man... I'll never forget that experience and how it left a deep mark inside me. Such

visions... Such a genetic journey... Such a cosmic journey...". He said, "It's so cosmic fucking funny... That night of our mental trip we ended walking outside the cave and we sat under a tree, remember? We started to contemplate the Full Moon as it went down over the horizon at dawn.". I said, "Yeah... Impossible to forget.". He said, "Such a weird coincidence... Right now we are together, in a distant country, many years have passed, and we are sitting under a tree, watching the Full Moon together.". "Amazing, so mystical... Magical... Cosmic...", I said to him.

We remained in silence for some minutes, just listening to the wind and staring at the huge Moon.

Then I said to him, "You sure had lots of fun, ah? With all these fantasies and transactions... Hahahahaha...". He said to me, "Well... No doubt... Everything is so different after all these years... I can't deny that sometimes I think and have the feeling that everything that happened during all these years is just like part of that mental trip we had there. Like if all this is just a dream, a very long one... And that the mental trip isn't over yet, and that we will wake up in that cave, and like none of this really happened... Sooner or later, all our wishes will always become ashes... Right?". We started to laugh again. He then said, "Look at that star... It's Katerina... And look at that one... It's Irina... Look at that one over there... That's Anna... Who the fuck is Luigi? Who the fuck is André? Who the fuck is Max Bellevue? Everything will always end up in... Nothing!".

Suddenly, everything became silent, even the insects stopped making their noises. It was like a very "dry" silence... It was a very strange moment, to be honest.

I asked him, "Hey, bro... We still aren't in that cave, right?".

He looked at me and said, "Who knows, maybe we are, maybe we aren't... Time will tell.". We both started to laugh once again.

We then walked back to the house. A few minutes later, Anna called a cab and the four of us went back to the apartment in Kremenchuk.

The four of us stayed a couple of hours talking, then we went to sleep, it was already 2 am.

During Sunday we all went for a walk to the city center, we went for a snack to a nice café. It was really a small city, so there wasn't really too much to do. We went to stare at the sunset near the river.

Two days later, the four of us went to Kyiv for a couple of days, we booked the same apartment in Urvivska street. We went to the city center to have some fun.

On Friday we went to the airport, my girlfriend and I came back to Brazil.

A year passed, it was already May 2020. André told me that Franco wrote him an e-mail saying that he received an envelope from the US embassy, it was a notification saying that André had an interview at the embassy in one week.

Three days later, Anna and André were in Lima. He went to the US embassy and they finally gave him the US residency. He had a month to go to the US.

They went back to Ukraine and Anna went to the US embassy in Kyiv for the visa.

20 days later they went to the US together. Anna always dreamt in visiting Miami. But she got surprised by the heat, it was already summer. They stayed for a week in Miami, then they went to Orlando. Two days later they arrived at Cape Coral, to visit André's mother. She was so happy to see them. She lived in the big house next to a

channel with her husband. They also went to meet other relatives and his brother. Everybody had to remain speechless by the presence and beauty of Anna. It was so funny. She had lots of fun.

They stayed like 3 months at his mother's house. Then they went back to Ukraine.

Once they were back in Kremenchuk they talked about their future. He asked her, "Anna, what do you want to do? Would you like to live in the US or stay here?". She liked what she saw and experienced over there, and how the ordinary lifestyle was in the US, she answered him, "I don't know yet. But it doesn't convince me. I don't know why? I mean... It's nice and beautiful, but I think I'm already used to be here, not even Kyiv. I mean... If I had to choose I would remain here.". André smiled and laughed a bit, and then said, "I was thinking exactly the same, my dear. I really want to remain here until the last days of my life. This city means everything to me. We will stay here. I really don't have anything to do in the US anymore. The only reason why I would go over there is only to visit my mother. But she can come here for a couple of weeks too. Right? No big deal.".

That night they both decided to stay in Kremenchuk for the rest of their lives.

Around April 2021, they went to the US again. They would pick up André's mother and take her for a short visit to Ukraine. They stayed for a few days in Kyiv and then they went to Kremenchuk.

After two weeks the three of them went back to the US. Before returning to Ukraine, Anna and André went to visit New York for a week, then they went to California for another week. They had a great time together.

That would be the last time Anna and André would go to the US.

In August, Anna's aunt, her mother's sister, passed away. A few weeks later they talked about taking her mother to the apartment she had in the city center, and the country house would be completely refurbished.

Anna and André decided to sell the apartment located in the city center, and Anna's mother would move to the apartment they had in Kvartal 278.

Once the country house was refurbished, Anna and André would move there permanently, it would be their new headquarters. From time to time they would spend some nights in the apartment.

The both of them also decided to assist every Friday afternoon to an English institute, they joined a speaking club just for fun. The manager of that institute was a young and tall lady called Olga, who was also an English teacher. She was very friendly with them. She would later become a very good friend of them over the years. She admired the relationship Anna and André had.

A year later... It was already late summer, a typical Sunday afternoon at their country house. They were having a drink sitting on the chairs in the terrace, listening to some music, contemplating the landscape together. Earlier that day they enjoyed themselves with that everlasting passion and romanticism that was so common between them after all these years. Anna said, "I have to admit that every time I have sex with you it feels like the first time.". He said, "I feel the same, dear. Honestly, I even thought I wasn't going to last so long with this sexual routine of ours. But, I think we can keep this going for several years to come...". They both started to laughed while they were holding each other's hand. They started to remember

everything that they went through since their first days together in CGN. She was always so grateful with him, she always repeated that since she met him everything went wonderful within her life, that he gave her the wings her life needed...

André noticed a funny vibe on Anna that Sunday afternoon, like if she had an extra dose of happiness in her eyes, and certain type of radiance.

He was an old fox, and he felt that she was about to tell him something.

Suddenly, Anna stood up from her chair and sat on André's legs, who remained sitting on his chair. While they were sitting together, Anna said, "You remember that on Friday morning I went to visit my mother, right?". He answered, "Yes.". Anna said, "I don't know exactly what you will feel about this, but... I sure know what I feel... And I feel even better and happier since that day... Because...". She then started to shed tears from her eyes while she smiled. She continued, "Because... I went to the doctor that morning... And they gave me a news that made me feel so happy... And it's all thanks to you and the love you have for me... My André... André... I'm pregnant...". She then started to cry more on André's chest. He then said to her, "Oh my god, Anna... That's such a wonderful news... Wow! We have to celebrate... I'm so happy...". He started to kiss her head and forehead while he hugged her tightly. She then whispered to his ear, "I love you, André. The love I feel for you is unmeasurable, like the size of the entire universe, even more... I love you! I'll love you forever...".

They then stood up and went for a walk through the garden while they were hugging to each other.

The End

"Whatever you do, whoever you deal with,  
show other people the way...  
The way towards wisdom, towards happiness...  
The way towards love...  
While we are still breathing, while we are still alive,  
while our hearts are still beating,  
while we still have that burning ancient fire within us...  
All what matters is Love... Nothing else matters...  
We are all together in this game to love and be loved...  
Before you stand up and walk away  
after listening to these words...  
Look at the person that is next to you,  
and tell that person from the bottom of your heart...  
I love you!".

André



## **Soundtrack**

### **(Beginning/Introduction)**

1. That Was My Girl – Funkadelic (1972)

### **(Every Day Is Like Sunday – I)**

2. Now (Paradise Now) – Meat Beat Manifesto (1991)
3. Pitch The Baby – Cocteau Twins (1990)
4. Chant Of Amergin – CoEx (1995)
5. Mother Tongue – Dead Can Dance (1988)
6. Pale Gallery – Amon Düül II (1970)

### **(Every Day Is Like Sunday – II)**

7. In The Trees – Moon Duo (2009)
8. Coma – Nefilim (1996)
9. Totem – Klaus Schulze (1975)
10. Good Day Sunshine – Slowdive (1993)

### **(Every Day Is Like Sunday – III)**

11. Lofty Skies – Tyrannosaurus Rex (1970)

### **(Breathtaking Fantasies, Scenes And Transactions – I)**

12. She's In Fashion – Suede (1999)
13. Kalter Lippenstift – Velvet Condom (2013)
14. Girl – Suicide (1977)
15. Goodbye Horses (Long Version) – Q Lazzarus (1988)

### **(Breathtaking Fantasies, Scenes And Transactions – II)**

16. A Girl In Trouble (It's a Temporary Thing) - Dance Mix – Romeo Void (1984)
17. Let It Grow – Actors (2015)
18. I Go To Sleep – Anika (2010)
19. Sell My Soul (excerpt) – Midnight Oil (1987)
20. Le Blues De Françoise – La Femme (2013)

(Breathtaking Fantasies, Scenes And Transactions – III)

- 21. We Are The People (Shapeshifters Remix) – Empire Of The Sun (2008)
- 22. A Million Drums – Claire (2013)

(Breathtaking Fantasies, Scenes And Transactions – IV)

- 23. Perfect Life – Belong (2011)
- 24. Paradise – Wild Nothing (2012)
- 25. Love Fade – Tamaryn (2010)

(Breathtaking Fantasies, Scenes And Transactions – V)

- 26. The Rip (Datasette Remix) – Portishead (2008)  
That Was My Girl – Funkadelic (1972)
- 27. Live In Dreams – Wild Nothing (2010)
- 28. Devil Mood – Smoke City (1997)
- 29. With You – Smoke City (1997)

(One More Time...)

- That Was My Girl – Funkadelic (1972)
- 30. Claridad – Thievery Corporation (2014)
- 31. Nós Dois – Thievery Corporation (2014)

(Ending scene)

- 32. My Girl – The Temptations (1965)

(End/credits)

- 33. That Was My Girl – The Parliaments (1966)